THE GIFT OF
WILLIAM G. KERCKHOFF
TO THE
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
AT LOS ANGELES

EX LIBRIS

THE LIBRARY OF
FRIEDRICH KLUGE
THE

APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE

IN

ANGLO-SAXON

BY

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
Professor of English in the University of Texas


Baltimore
The Modern Language Association of America
1901
THE

APPPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE

IN

ANGLO-SAXON

BY

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH IN THE UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS

Reprinted from the Publications of the Modern Language Association of America,
Vol. XVI, No. 2, Baltimore, June, 1901

Baltimore
THE MODERN LANGUAGE ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA
1901

119213
## CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION ................................................................................. 141  
  I. The Dual Nature of the Participle; Definitions ................. 141  
  II. The History of the Term Appositive Participle ............... 144  
  III. The Relative Age of the Several Uses of the Participle ... 149  
  IV. The Inflexion and the Position of the Appositive Parti- ciple .......................................................... 150

### Chapter I. Statistics of the Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon
  
  I. In the Prose Works ......................................................... 154  
  II. In the Poems ................................................................. 234  
  III. Synoptic Table ....................................................... 266

### Chapter II. Uses of the Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon
  
  I. The Adjectival Use ......................................................... 268  
  II. The Adverbial Use ....................................................... 270  
   1. Modal ................................................................. 274  
   2. Temporal ............................................................. 278  
   3. Causal ................................................................. 279  
   4. Final ................................................................. 280  
   5. Concessive ........................................................... 282  
   6. Conditional ........................................................... 284  
  III. The Co-ordinate Use .................................................... 285  
   1. The “Circumstantial” Participle ............................... 286  
   2. The “Iterating” Participle ........................................... 287  
   3. Notes ................................................................. 289  
  IV. Summary of Uses ....................................................... 292

### Chapter III. Origin of the Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon
  
  I. The Adjectival Use ......................................................... 297  
  II. The Adverbial Use ....................................................... 300  
   1. Modal ................................................................. 300  
   2. Temporal ............................................................. 301
CONTENTS

3. Causal...................................................... 302
4. Final......................................................... 304
5. Concessive.................................................. 304
6. Conditional.................................................. 305

III. The Co-ordinate Use........................................ 306

IV. The Governing Power of the Participle.......................... 307
1. The Present Participle....................................... 307
2. The Preterite Participle..................................... 313

V. Table of Latin Correspondences.................................. 315

Chapter IV. The Anglo-Saxon Rendering of the Latin Appositive Participle.......................... 321
1. By a Co-ordinated Finite Verb............................... 321
2. By a Subordinated Finite Verb................................ 323
3. By a Prepositional Phrase.................................... 326
4. By a Verb in the Infinitive Mood............................. 327
5. By an Attributive Participle.................................. 328
6. By an Absolute Participle..................................... 328
7. By an Adverb................................................. 328
8. By an Adjective............................................... 328
9. By a Substantive.............................................. 329

Chapter V. The Appositive Participle in the Other Germanic Languages............................ 330
1. Uses.......................................................... 330
   1. In Gothic.................................................. 330
   2. In the Scandinavian Languages........................... 332
   3. In High German............................................ 334
   4. In Old Saxon............................................... 335
2. Origin...................................................... 339
3. Rendering of Greek and Latin Appositive Participle............. 341

Chapter VI. The Anglo-Saxon Appositive Participle as a Norm of Style.................................. 344

Chapter VII. Results............................................... 348

Additions and Corrections......................................... 353

Bibliography...................................................... 355
VIII.—THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

The twofold nature of the participle is sufficiently attested by the fact that it is universally defined as a verbal adjective. The genesis of this twofold nature has been interestingly discussed by Brugmann (I. F., v, 88 ff.; Gr. Gr. 3 §§ 479 f.) and by Delbrück (ii, p. 477). Mine is the humbler task of pointing out the various manifestations of this dual nature as exemplified in the appositive use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon; to which is appended a brief survey of the same phenomena in the other Germanic languages. This is by no means an easy task, since the same participle may be dominantly adjectival in one sentence, prevailingly verbal in another, and equally divided between the two in a third. Of course, too, a participle may be used as a noun; but in such case it ceases to be a participle; hence in this paper no account is taken of the substantivized participle. However, certain adverbial uses of the participle are treated.

The difficulty of our problem is further aggravated by the diversity of meaning attached to the same term by different
grammarians. At the outset, therefore, it is necessary to define the terms used in this monograph. The study is based upon a twofold classification of the participle: (I) According to the nature of the participle; (II) According to the relationship of the participle to its subject (or principal).

According to its nature, a participle is (1) verbal when the assertive force is dominant, and (2) adjectival when the descriptive force is dominant; as a rule, the verbal participle denotes an act in the widest sense, while the adjectival denotes a state. These terms, of course, are relative only, and under different collocations each is equally applicable to the same word. Thus, in the phrase, the shining sun, shining is adjectival, if not an adjective; while in the sentence, The sun, shining through the trees, lighted our path, the participle is verbal. But, despite this relativity, the distinction is of great importance; and it is possible to mark off certain more or less stable groups. The preterite participle, for instance, is more adjectival than the present; as the present participle with an object is more verbal than one without an object. Occasionally, too, a participle is so constantly used adjectivally that it becomes an adjective proper, as in the case of the Latin sanctus, the A.-S. cwS, etc. The completely adjectivized participle is not treated in this monograph.

According to its relationship to its principal, a participle is (A) independent (or absolute) when its subject is grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, and (B) dependent (or conjoint) when its subject is not grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, but is intimately bound up therewith. Examples are:—(A): Bede$^1$ 284. 20: sua cælum gesecundum upp in heofonas gewat = Bede$^2$ 220. 11: sic uidentibus sanctis ad alta subduxit (see my Abs. Pte. in A.-S., p. 5 ff.);—(B): Luke 4. 40: he synadrygum hys hand onsettende hig gehcalde = ille singulis manus imponens curabat eos. The dependent (or conjoint) participle may be subdivided into (1) predicative (or supplementary, cf. Goodwin, *Moods and Tenses*, § 877), when the participle is joined to its
subject by means of a verb; (2) non-predicative (or assumptive, cf. Sweet, § 44), when not joined to its subject by the instrumentality of a verb. The predicative participle may be subdivided into (a) predicate nominative and (b) predicate accusative; the non-predicative (or assumptive), into (a) attributive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so close that the two constitute one indivisible idea, and (b) appositive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so loose that the two seem to constitute two independent ideas; or, to use the words of Sweet (§ 90): “When the subordination of an assumptive (attributive) word to its head-word is so slight that the two are almost co-ordinate, the adjunct-word is said to be in apposition to its head-word.” A few examples will suffice for illustration:— (1) Predicative (or Supplementary): (a) Predicate Nominative: Elene 492: Stephanus wæs stanum worpod;—ib. 486: ða ðy ðriddan dég lifyende aras, etc.;— (b) Predicate Accusative: Luke 22. 56: ða hine gewæah sum ðíne æt leohet sittende = quem cum vidisset ancilla quaedam sedentem ad lumen;—Bl. Hom. 218. 7: ða mette he ðane man forðfereðne, etc.;—(2) Non-predicative (or Assumptive): (a) Attributive: Beow. 741: he gefeng hwaðæ forman siðe slependne vine;—ib. 581: ða nec sce oðær . . . wudu wealdendu;—ib. 1245: þær on bencæ wæs . . . yðgesene . . . hringed byrne;—ib. 216: guman ut scæfon . . . wudu bundenne, etc.;— (b) Appositive: Mat. 9. 12: se Hælend æceð, ðís gehyrende = At Jesus audiens, ait;—Luke 1. 74: ðæt we bunan æge of ðre feonda handa alyse hime ðeowian = Ut sine timore, de manu . . . liberati, serviamus illi;—Mat. 8. 9: Soðlice ic eom man under anwealde gesætt = Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate constitutus;—Ælfr. Hom. 1. 62a: Iohannes besæah to heoforum, ðís æweðende, etc.

No originality is claimed for the above classification; for, although I have not found the system as a whole in any treatise, almost every one of the terms is substantially so used in one or more standard works. Nor is the system
looked upon as ideal; it is given merely because it seems a fair working scheme for this monograph. But, while I believe that all my terms are clear as above defined and exemplified, the word appositive demands more extended treatment, since it gives the title to this paper.

II.

Remoteness from the larger libraries precludes my giving a complete history of the phrase appositive participle; and I must content myself with a brief statement concerning the more important grammatical treatises that have been accessible to me. Fortunately, as a reference to the bibliography will show, I have been able to consult all the most significant monographs (old as well as new) on the participle in Anglo-Saxon and in the other Teutonic tongues.

The phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category by Grimm, Becker, Mätzner, Koch, March, Sweet, or Delbrück among the Germanic grammarians, or by Classen, Draeger, Gildersleeve, or Goodwin among the classicists. The locution seems to have been habitually used first by Krüger and Curtius in their Greek grammars, by Madvig in his Latin grammar, by Gabelentz and Lōbe in their Gothic grammar, and by Vernaleken in his Deutsche Syntax; and its present currency is perhaps largely due to the wide popularity of these works, especially the first three.

By the grammarians who regularly make use of the phrase, two distinct definitions have been given. The one set restricts the term appositive to the participle that is equal to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause, while the other extends it also to the participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause. Judged by their definitions, Krüger and Curtius originally sided with the former. Krüger's state-

1 In his Greek grammar of 1829 (pp. 469, 474), however, Bernhardy has a few words concerning the appositive use of the participle.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 145

ment is as follows (p. 215)\footnote{I quote from the fifth edition of his *Attische Syntax* (Leipzig, 1873), but the same statement, I have been informed, occurs in the first edition (Leipzig, 1843).}: “Die appositive Participial-construction und ihr zur Seite gehend die absolute sind eine unklarere Ausdrucksweise für Sätze die mit dem Hauptsätze in einem temporalen oder realen Verhältnisse stehen.” Examples are cited of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) conditional, (3) causal, and (4) concessive clauses, but not in adjectival (relative) clauses, though under the head of temporal uses (p. 217, 10, Anmik. 1) this remark is made: “In vielen Fällen übersetzen wir die Participia durch das Relativ oder durch Conjunctionen.” To the same effect is the definition of Curtius (§ 579)\footnote{I quote from the ninth edition (Prag, 1870), but substantially the same statement is made in the first edition (Prag, 1852). And in the chapter on the Participle in his *Erläuterungen*\footnote{This note is not in the first edition of the grammar.} (p. 203) Curtius thus acknowledges his indebtedness to Krüger: “In der Gliederung dieser Gebrauchswisen bin ich wesentlich K. W. Krüger gefolgt, ohne jedoch in der Reihenfolge mich ihm anzuschliessen.”—My quotation is from the third edition of the *Erläuterungen* (1875), but it does not differ essentially from the statement of the first edition (1863).}: “Das Particip dient dazu, einem Substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende Eigenschaft oder Thätigkeit beizulegen. In diesem Falle ist das Particip eine kurze und unbestimmtere Ausdrucksweise für das, was sonst durch Nebensätze mit Conjunctionen der verschiedensten Art ausgedrückt wird.” In the following sections (580–583) he gives examples of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) causal and final, (3) concessive, and (4) conditional clauses; adding this note: “Bei dem mannichfaltigen Gebrauch der appositiven Participien ist nicht zu überssehen, dass ein solches Particip an sich keine der in §§ 580–583 entwickelten Bedeutungen deutlich ausdrückt, dass wir vielmehr nur zur Übersetzung uns der einen oder der andern Wendung bedienen, um dasselbe in schärferer Weise auszusprechen, was durch das Particip nur angedeutet.
ist." Gering specifically restricts the appositive participle to adverbial clauses (p. 393): "Während das attributive particip bestimmend und erklärend zu dem nomen tritt, dient das appositive dazu, gewisse adverbialle nebenbestimmungen der handlung auszudrücken. Es bezeichnet daher, in welcher zeit, aus welchem grunde, in welcher absicht, unter welchen bedingungen oder einschränkungen, durch welche mittel, auf welche art und weise eine person oder ein gegenstand etwas ausführte oder erlitt. Characteristisch für das appositive particip ist es, dass es nie den artikel bei sich hat." The same restriction is made by Karl Köhler and by Kühn, though the latter does not use the term appositive, but speaks of the use of the participle "in eigentlicher participialer Funktion in Vertretung eines Adverbialsatzes."

But, despite the high standing of Krüger, Curtius, and Gering, the restriction of the appositive participle to adverbial uses seems unwise. Indeed, it may be doubted whether Curtius intended so to limit the term by the definition above quoted; if so, he afterwards changed his mind, for in his Erläuterungen ³ (p. 203) he gives a definition of the appositive participle that includes its use in adjectival (relative) as well as in adverbial (conjunctive) clauses: "Der 'appositive Gebrauch' schliesst sich an die § 361, 12 gegebene Definition der Apposition an. Wie ich unter Apposition einer Zusatz loserer Art verstehe, welcher in der Regel synonym mit einem beschreibenden Zwischen—or Nebensatz ist, so entsprechen die appositiven Participien als kürzere, losere und deshalb auch weniger bestimmte Ausdrucksweisen wesentlich demselben Zwecke, der in festerer Weise durch relative ⁴ und Conjunctionssätze erreicht wird." The remainder of his comment, though not on this point, is too instructive to omit: "Classen in seinen oben (S. 173) erwähnten Beobachtungen über den homerischen Sprachgebrauch nennt den von mir appositiv genannten Gebrauch

¹The italics are mine.
prädicativ. Ich verkenne nicht, dass sich auch diese Bezeichnung rechtfertigen lässt, insofern als das appositive Partizip, unterschieden vom attributiven, allerdings eine aussagende, prädicirende Kraft besitzt, die am entschiedensten in den absoluten Partizipialconstructionen hervortritt. Allein es scheint mir doch gerathener, den Ausdruck prädicatives Partizip mit Krüger auf denjenigen Gebrauch zu beschränken, bei welchem das Partizip zur Ergänzung eines verbalen Prädicats dient (§ 589 bis 594) und als solches einen wesentlichen Theil der Aussage bildet.” Vernaleken leaves no doubt as to his position (p. 502): “Das partizip welches dazu dient einem substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende eigenschaft oder thätigkeit beizulegen, also appositionell steht, und so eine kürzere ausdrucksweise ist für das, was sonst durch nebensätze mit bindewortern oder dem relativ ausgedrückt wird, findet sich,” etc.; which definition clearly includes adjective (relative) as well as adverbial (conjunctive) clauses. With this O. Erdmann substantially agrees; for, while he does not use the phrase appositive participle, it is clear that his selbständiges Participium of the following quotation corresponds to Vernaleken’s appositive participle (Syntax d. Spr. Otfrids, p. 214): “Die verbale Natur des Participiums tritt nicht immer in gleichem Masse hervor. Ich suche bei einem jeden der beiden Participia, welche die ahd. Sprache besitzt, die Belege mit Rücksicht hierauf zu ordnen, und unterscheide drei Abschnitte, je nachdem das Participium eine selbständige, von der Handlung des Hauptsatzes unterschiedene Tätigkeit aussagt, oder prädicativ mit dem Verbum zu dem Begriffe einer einzigen Tätigkeit verschmilzt, oder endlich attributiv wie ein Adj. gebraucht wird um eine dem Gegenstande, auf welchen es sich bezieht, stetig inwohnende Eigenschaft zu bezeichnen.” In his examples Erdmann cites participles that represent adjetival as well as adverbial clauses; as does Mourek, who (p. 33) speaks of the participle “in selbständiger, prädicativer, satzvertretender apposition.” With the exception of K. Köhler and of Kühn, who, as already stated,
restrict the appositive participle to adverbial clauses, all the writers on Old English Syntax named in the bibliography include under the appositive use of the participle adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. Some (Conradi, Einenkel, Flamme, Höser, Kempf, Mohrbutter, Schürmann, Wülfling) use the phrase appositive participle; others (Furkert, Hertel, Planer, Reussner, Seyfarth, Spaeth, Wohlfahrt) speak of the "eigentliches Participium zur Abkürzung eines Satzes" (Wohlfahrt, p. 39); and others (Koch, Mätzner, March, Sweet) have no specific designation for the construction.

Another apparently divergent interpretation calls for brief mention. The standard New High German grammars of Brandt, von Jagemann, Thomas, and Whitney regularly use the expression appositive participle to indicate, in the words of Thomas, "an appositional predicate, which denotes a concomitant act or state;" but "such a participle or participial phrase is," according to Whitney (§ 357), "used only in the sense of an adjective clause, and expresses ordinarily an accompanying circumstance, or describes a state or condition; it may not be used, as in English, to signify a determining cause, or otherwise adverbially." But, as a following note by Whitney and some examples cited by Thomas show, this statement is somewhat too strong, for in New High German an appositive participle is occasionally used in place of a dependent adverbial clause. Moreover, in making the above remark, Whitney intended to acquaint his reader with New High German usage and not to give a general definition of a grammatical term.

To sum up the matter: by a number of eminent grammarians the phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category; by others equally eminent it is habitually used, but in different senses. Of the latter some restrict

---

1 Except the older grammarians (Hickes, Lye, and Manning), who do not treat the construction of the appositive participle.

2 Wülfling's treatment of the Appositive Participle has not appeared as yet.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 149

the appositive use to the participle that is equivalent to an adverbial clause, while others make it include adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. The latter usage, though not universal, is becoming general, especially with students of Germanic grammar.

To me the general introduction of this term into our textbooks seems highly desirable, since it would extend to the use of the participle what the student had already learned with reference to the noun. As the statistics show, I include under appositive the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival clause as well as that which is equal to an adverbial clause. The uses of the adverbial appositive participle correspond closely to those of the subordinate adverbial clause, but are so varied as to call for treatment in a separate chapter (II).

III.

The appositive use of the participle is common to the Indo-Germanic languages, but by no means equally common. Greek leads the others, and Latin is far in advance of the Germanic languages. An instructive general treatment of the subject is given by Jolly in his *Zur Lehre vom Partizip* and by Delbrück in his *Syntax*. To the works named by Delbrück I may add those of Bolling, Fay, Helm, Köberlin, Milroy, and Tannen in Latin and in Greek. Of works on the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English a brief account is given in Chapter v.

In the article just referred to, Jolly maintains that the attributive use of the participle preceded the appositive, and that the appositive preceded the predicative, which latter he considers a younger variation of the appositive. In Anglo-Saxon it is probable, I think, that the attributive use preceded the appositive, the latter growing out of the former when thrust into post-position, either because the noun had several participles modifying it at once or because the participle was itself
modified (see section iv., below). The appositive use of the adjectival participle may have preceded the predicative use of the participle; for the appositive adjectival participle is common in Anglo-Saxon poetry, while, as Pessels (p. 49) has shown, the predicative participle of the progressive tenses is very rare in Anglo-Saxon poetry, though common in the prose. But the appositive use of the verbal participle, at least of the participle governing a direct object, is most probably of later development in English than the predicative use of the present participle; since the progressive tenses are very common in the works of Alfred (nearly 600 exs., according to Pessels, p. 51), while the appositive participle with a direct object is practically unknown to him (only 18 exs., of which 17 are in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle), and does not become frequent until the time of Ælfric (see Statistics). But we must turn from these speculative questions to matters about which a reasonable degree of certainty is possible.

IV.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs by far most frequently in the nominative case, as is true also in Lithuanian (Delbrück, p. 490) and in Old High German (Mourek). For the representation of the several cases in Anglo-Saxon see the statistics.

The inflexion of the appositive participle is as follows:—
(1) Present:—The nominative singular of all genders has -ende, with these exceptions: -end occurs three times in the masculine (Boeth. 8. 5, Ælfr. L. 8. 282. 5, Ælfr. Hept. (Judges) 4. 22), and once in the feminine (Bede¹ 72. 3); by confusion of inflected infinitive with participle, Benet has -enne for -ende four times (95. 11, 114. 10, 61. 7, all masc.; 98. 6, fem.), -an for -end once (29. 11, masc.), and -endre for -ende once (16. 9); Boeth.¹ 73. 22 has -inde, m. The GSMN. has
-endes except once, in Benet (109. 2: seegeende). The GSF. is
-endre except once, in Ælfric (L. S. xxiii. B. 426: senecende).
The DSMN. is usually -endum (20 exs.), but is -ende occasion-
ally (7 exs.: 1 in Ælfric, 1 in Benedict, 5 in Ælfric), and
-endan, weak, once (Luke 6. 49). The DSF. is -ende normally
(4 exs.), rarely -ende (1 ex.: Ælfric). The ASM. is -endne 21
times,1 but -ende 28 times (Ælfric 3, Ælfric 8, A.-S. Hom. &
L. S. 5, Gospels 6, Poems 6). The ASF. is invariably -ende.
The ASN. is -ende except once (Chron. 656 E: eæxend). The
N. and APMFN. is -ende except twice in Benet (21. 7: be-
cumene for becumende, apm.; 26. 14: stirienda, apn.). The
GP. is -endra (14 exs.) except twice in Benet (69. 1: etenda,
78. 12: utgangendre). The DP. is -endum (30 exs.) except
twice (Ælfr. de e. et n. Test 5. 34: farende; A.-S. Hom. &
L. of S. 1, 7. 151: ib.).

(2) Preterite:—The NSMN. is -ed (-od,2 -ad2; -i,3) for
weak and -en for strong verbs. The NSF. is regularly
uninflected (64 exs.), being -ed for strong and -en for
weak verbs; except twice in Ælfric (Hom. ii, 902: fortreden,
weak; L. S. xxiii. B. 524: gedrefedu). The GSMN. is once
-es (Chron. 1100 E) and once -ed (Christ 20: forweyned).
The GSF. is -re (2 exs.). The DSMN. is sometimes inflected
(-um (-an): 11 exs.: EWS. 7, Gosp. 1, Benet 1, Poems 2),
but is oftener not inflected (21 exs.: Ælfric 17, A.-S. Hom.
& L. S. 2, Poems 2). The DSF. is occasionally inflected
(-re: 4 exs.: Ælfric 1, Ælfric 2, Gosp. 1), but usually not
(14 exs.: Bl. Hom. 1, Ælfric 12, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1). The
ASM. is sometimes inflected (-ne: 47 exs.: Ælfric 10, Ælfric
17, Gosp. 11, Poems 8, Benet 1), sometimes not (33 exs.:
Ælfric 1, Ælfric 28, Poems 4). The ASF. is half the time
inflected (-e: 18 exs.: Ælfric 3, Ælfric 2, A.-S. Hom. & L.
S. 1, Gosp. 1, Wulfst. 1, Poems 10), the other half not (17
exs.: Ælfric 1, Ælfric 6, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Wulfst. 3,

1In one of these (Benet 107. 7) the text has -enne for -endne.
2These regular variants of -ed- will not be specified hereafter.
Benet 2, Poems 4). The ASN. is uninflected except in Bede 314. 14 (getrymede, but MS. Ca.: getrymed). The N. and APM. is habitually inflected (-e: over 200 exs., in all the texts), but occasionally not (15 exs.: E. W. S. 4, A.-S. Hom. & L. S. 1, Benet 1, Poems 9). The N. and APF. is invariably inflected (-e 29 exs.; -u 1 ex.: Benet 92. 15, but see note thereon in statistics). The N. and APN. is usually inflected (-e: 24 exs.; -an, weak, 1 ex.: Bede 182. 23), but is uninflected at times (13 exs.: Ælfric 2, Beded. 1, Poems 10). The GP. is inflected regularly (-ra: 13 exs.) except once in the Chron. (656 E: heored). The DP. is inflected four times (-um), and is uninflected three times (Ælfric 1, Ælfric 2).

It is evident, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than is stated in Sievers's Angelsächsische Grammatik. The same is true of Old High German (Mourek, p. 19; O. Erdmann, Syntax d. Spr. Offrids, § 355) and of Old Saxon (Pratje, § 156), but not of Gothic (Gering, p. 393).

Again, the inflexion of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is almost invariably strong. In this sentence from the Blickling Homilies (107. 20: Æa eaðsmodan heortan and Æa forhtygendan and Æa bifigendan and Æa evacigendan and Æa oudrwaldendan hæora Scyppend, ne forhoga Æa nefice God ne ne forsyl̆), the weak participle, oudrwaldendan, has an object, and is partly attributive and partly appositive. The sentence illustrates well, I think, the passage of the attributive into the appositive use of the participle; the participle is thrust into post-position because its principal has several participial modifiers, and because the participle itself has a direct object (see section iii., above). Sometimes, even in pre-position, the weak participle is strongly appositive, as in Luke 6. 49: He is gelic Æam timbriendan men his hus ofer Æa corðan = similis est homini aedificanti domum super terram;—Bede 182. 23: was geworden sætte Æare scelfan neahte Æa brohton (MS. B.:
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 153

gebrohtan) ban ute awunedon = 148. 17: factum est ut . . .
reliquiae adlatae foris permanerent; ib. 24. 22; Ælfr. Hom.
II., 90*²; Ælfr. L. S. xxvii. 117. Compare, too, Bede¹ 130.
33: sæt he secelde his freond ðone betstan in nerce gesetum
(MS. B. : gesettan) in gold bebygan = 110. 9: amicum sum
optimum in necessitate positum auro uendere. Mourek (p. 46)
cites three examples of the appositive participle with weak
inflection in Tatian.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle regularly follows
its principal (post-position), though occasionally it precedes
(pre-position: about 100 exs. in all, of which 8 occur in the
Poems). Typical illustrations are: Matthew 8. 25: hy awehton
hyne, ðus cweðende = suscitaverunt eum, dicentes; Beowulf
1819: we sēlīsend scegan wyllice, feorran cumene; Beow. 721:
Com . . . rine siðian dreamum bedēled;—Math. 2. 11: gangende
into ðam huse, hi gemetton sæt cild mid Marian = intrantes
domum invenerunt puerum; Beow. 1581: sleēpende freāt folces
Denigea fyftyne men. It should be added that it is particu-
larly difficult to distinguish between the post-positive attribu-
tive and the appositive participle; but what Mourek (p. 44)
says of Tatian seems to me true of Anglo-Saxon in general:
most post-positive participles are appositive rather than
attributive.
CHAPTER I.

STATISTICS OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Explanatory Note.

With the exception of the glosses and of a few out-of-prints, I have made a statistical reading of the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature and of the more definitely known Latin originals of the prose texts. For a detailed statement, see the bibliography.

Within the respective groups the works are arranged approximately in their chronological order, except the Minor Poems, which are given in their alphabetic order.

For the light that it throws upon Anglo-Saxon and Germanic syntax, the participle with an object is everywhere separated from the participle without an object. Obviously the distinction is of less importance for the preterite than for the present participle. As applied to the present participle, the term object has its usual signification; as applied to the preterite participle, it includes not only the object in the ordinary acceptation, but also any noun modifier of the participle.

To show the inflection of the participle, each case, number, and gender is cited separately. The abbreviations used to designate these are self-explanatory, as nsn. = nominative, singular, neuter, etc. Cases not cited do not occur. "Other examples" are throughout cited in the alphabetic order of the Anglo-Saxon participles. Compound participles are not separated from the simple ones.

For convenience I have not distinguished § and ¶, but have uniformly used §.
In all of the more definitely known translations the Latin original is given. I have carefully compared my own statistics with those given in the monographs upon Anglo-Saxon syntax named in the bibliography; and but for the divergent views, already discussed, as to what constitutes an appositive participle, I should give in detail the results of my several collations. However, if the definition given in each treatise is observed, the difference is not great; hence I shall call attention to only the more noteworthy discrepancies disclosed by my collations.

I have tried to make the statistics complete according to the definition given in my Introduction. But, in such a mass of details, occasional omissions and misclassifications are inevitable; I can only hope that they will not prove so numerous or serious as to invalidate this history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

Finally, I trust that these statistics, which at first doubtless appear unnecessarily detailed, may throw some light on several problems not germane to the purpose of this monograph, such as the contested authorship of the Alfredian works; the Anglo-Saxon vocabulary; the relationship of Anglo-Saxon to Latin syntax aside from the use of the participle, etc.;—some of which I hope to take up at another time.

I. IN THE PROSE WORKS.

BEDE¹ (180).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (107).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (93).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (58):—

NSM. (23):—22. 34: Dæt sum on N. megðe of deaðe arisende . . . secgende wæs = 303. 24: Ut quidam . . . a
mortuis *resurgens* . . . narraverit; 102. 21 is scgd Æset he *beotigende* forecwæde = 83. 27: *fertur minitans praedixisse*.—


**NSF. (3):—332. 2: Æreo & Ærtig Æsen ærestum heo æfelice gefylde in weoruldhade *drohtieende = 252. 23: xxxiii primos in saculari habitu nobilissime conversata compleuit.**—

Other examples: 186. 31: *ondraudende = 151. 10: limens*; 18. 20: *utgangende = 220. 22: egressura.***

**NSN. (1):—86. 10: mid Æy Æset mood Æis ne *weotende arefinende = 60. 7: quia hane animum nescientem pertulisse.***

**NSM. or F. (2):—240. 26: wol . . . *grimsigende = 192. 4: desaerien*; 264. 25: *ingongende = 208. 25: egressa* (the two preceding nouns are Æa stefn and Æone sang. Of ingressa the subject is vox).***

**NPM. (8):—252. 2a <b: se b. and heora lareowas *gefeonde and blissigende* ham hwurfon = 200. 7: sacerdotes, doctor-esque . . . rediere lactantes.—Other examples:—310. 1: *feohtende = 238. 19: compignantes*; 284. 15: *forhtieende = 220. 5: tremeactae*; 312. 2: ondetende = 239. 24: professi;***

1In this text the superior letters distinguish different examples in the same line.
54. 4: saringende = 32. 33: dolentes; 438. 30: sittende =
312. 11: residens; 186. 9: sorgiende = 150. 13: solliciti.

NPN (1):—158. 27: Sider gyfeonde coman ... folc Godes word to gehyranne = 132. 20: confuebant ad audiendum verbum populii gaudentes (or pred.?).

NDM. (2):—430. 27: hwerfende = 308. 7: reuersi; 424. 20: suigiende = 304. 30: tacentes.

GPN. (1):—104. 18: seo is monigra folca ceapstow of londe and of se cumendra = 85. 11: ... popolorum terra marique ueniuntium.

DSM. (3):—316. 18: swa swa me seolfum frinendum ... W. sægde = 343. 12: siet mihimet seisicitanli ... W. referebat.—Other examples: 382. 22: biddendum = 280. 12: rogenti (or attrib.?); 330. 14: tafrindendum = 251. 34: periclitani.

DSF. (1):—288. 34: swa swa heo to hire lijigendre spreec, bæd ðæt, etc. = 223. 5: quasi uientem adlocuta, rogavit.


ASN. (2):—140. 12: he noht elles dyde ... ðæt cumende Cristes folc Sider of eallum tunum ... mid god-cundre lare timbrede = 115. 4: nil aliud ageret quam con-fluentem eo ... plebem C. ... verbo instruere; 412. 13: liyende = 298. 9: iacentem.

APM. (2):—276. 12: licade us efenman æfter ðæwe arwyrðra rehta smæygende bi ðæm, etc. = 215. 1: placuit conuenire nos, ... tractaturos de, etc.; 10. 29: hwyle wraen bi forhogyende æfterfyligde = 81. 8: quaeue illos spernetes
ultio secura est. [Miller and Smith have *him forhogiende*, in which case *forhogiende* would be a “crude” dative plural; but it seems preferable to read *hi forhogiende*, the variant given by Miller and Schipper, which corresponds better with the Latin. Though Miller apparently so translates, *him* could scarcely be the object of *forhogiende*, since according to Wülfing (p. 186) this verb governs the accusative only.]

APF. (2):—426. 33a-b: *Sa geseah ic manigo ßara wergra gasta v. monna sawla grornende & heofende teon & laedan on = 306. 13a-b: considero turbam malignorum spirituum, quae quinque animas hominum *merentes heialantesque* . . . trahebat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually in immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):—

NSM. (3):—160. 15: he *ßa gifeonde ßearfum rehte and sealde* = 135. 28: Cuncta . . . mox hauperibus . . . ergare *gaudebat* (cf. *gefeonde = gaudentes* in 158. 27 = 132. 20, etc.).—Other examples:—88. 17a-b: *goiende ß geomriende cwæð = 61. 25: gekemebat* dicens.


3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (20):—

NSM. (16):—22. 17a-b: *Dæt he his preosta zenne . . . gebiddende ß blestigende framm deaße gecyrde = 289. 4f-d: orando ac benedicendo a morte renocauerit.*—Other examples:—348. 25: *bebeodende = 262. 18: commendando*; 270. 34: *deoliodende = 212. 11: errando*; 346. 3: *codorcende = 260. 31: ruminando*; 246. 25b: *gongende = 195. 21b: incedendo*; *gebiddende = orando*, 8. 23b = 37. 5, 12. 10 = 93. 26, 16. 2 = 158. 27, 20. 29 = 271. 3, 22. 7b = 281. 2, 22. 11 = 285. 1, 22. 14 = 288. 1; *ib. = benedicendo*, 22. 9
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 159

= 282. 30; 246. 25*: ridende = 195. 21*: equitando; 348. 24: segmente = 262. 17: signando.
NSF. (2):—72. 3a&b: sætte oft [cirice is to be supplied from earlier part of sentence] sæt widerworde yfel aborende and eigend (MS. O.: yldende) bewercð = 51. 29, 30: ut saepe malum quod adversatur portando et dissimulando conpescat.
NPM. (1):—72. 9: ða þe him ne ondrædað wælondæ syngian = 52. 1: qui non metuunt sciendo peccare.
ASM. (1):—22. 16*: ðæt he his preosta ðænne of horse fallende & gebrysedæ gelice gebiddende & blæsiggende fræm deæðec gecyrde = 289. 4*: Ut clericum suum cadendo contritum, aequæ orando ac benedicendo a morte renocauerit.
4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—
NSM. (1):—204. 3: he . . . on ðære styðæ ·stondende forðerðe = 160. 5: . . . adelinæ destinae . . . spiritum, uiuae exhalaret ultimum.
NPM. (1):—54. 5: sume forhtænde on eðle gebidon = 33. 1: alii perstantes in patria trepida . . . agebant.
5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—
NSM. (1):—142. 8: sægde he ðæt he hine encoht wæsendæ gesawæ = 116. 12: et se in pueritia vidisse testabatur. [hine here stands for here, 'sanctuary.'—Cf. Bede 188. 1: in ðam mynstre . . . in ðam encohtæwæsendum ðís hælo wundor worden wæs = 151. 15: in eodem monasterio . . . in quo tune puero factum erat hoc miraculum sanitatis, in which encohtæwæsendum is perhaps a substantive. Cf. further Widsið 39; Beow. 46, 372, 535, 1187.]
6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):—
NSM. (1):—38. 1: ða . . . he calle ða wiþu . . . geðyldelicæ and geþeondæ for Drihtne abær and ærasfeðe = 20. 1: Qui . . . patienter hæc pro Domino immo gaudenter ferebat. [Perhaps it is better to consider geþeondæ here as a pure adverb.]
NPM. (1):—310. 30: Τὸς we seondon arfâstlice fyligende & rihtwuldiriende = 239. 23: Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque orthodoxae. [Pure adverb? Cf. 310. 25: we wæron smeagende rehte geleofan & rehtwuldiriende = 239. 17: fidem rectam & orthodoxam exposuimus, where rehtwuldiriende is an adjective.]

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin future infinitive (2):

NPM. (2):—266. 32a&b: æfter seforon dagum heo eft hveorfende & cuumende me geheleton; þa me þonne mid him lædan woldon = 209. 34: se redituros, ac me secum adducturos esse promiserunt.

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):

NSM. (1):—464. 16: gefeonde ða heofonlican rico gestah & gesohite = 330. 1: no Latin correspondent.

NPM. (1):—100. 12: Da onedeton eac Brettas seomende ðæt heo ongeton = 82. 14: Tum Brettones confitentur quidem intellekwise se.

ASM. (1):—214. 32: ða gegreopon ða unclsetan gastas sænne of ðam monnum ðe heo in ðæm fyre berudon and ðæst-ton þ wrupon swa beornendne on hine & he gehran his seuldra þ his ceæan þ hine swa forbærndon = 166. 26: arripientes immundi spiritus unum de eis, quos in ignibus torrebant, iactaverunt in eum, et contingentes humerum maxillamque eius incenderunt.

II. With an Object (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (14):

NSM. (8):—378. 25: he mid ðy mæstan gewinne mid his cryce hine wredigende ham becom [MS. B.: hine gewreðede & ham becom] = 278. 15: maximo eum labore baenlo innitens domum peruenit. Cf. 380. 7: his leomo mid his cryce wredigende code in cyrican [MS. B.: gewreðede &
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 161
eode = 278. 27: artus baculo sustentans intranit ecclesiam,—
14. 4: Æt se ylea cyning biddende . . . biscope onfeng Aidanum on naman gehatenne = 131. 4: Ut . . . rex postu-

tans antistitem . . . acceperit Aidanum. Cf. 10. 12: andsware
biddende onfeng = 48. 2: responsa petens acceperit.—10. 7:
and swa . . . G. word bodigende on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic . . .
Cantiam praedicaturus intranerit.—352. 14: Ætte . . . ongan, swa he eft for intingan sære godecundan lufan lust-
fulfriende sæam ecum medium fiestlice forðlæste = 264. 12:
quod . . . iam causa diuini amoris selectatus praemiis inde-
fessus agebat.—450. 20: mid Æy he wæs godre gleaunesse
cuht Æ he Æa yldo mid Æawum offerstigende [MS. B.: wæs
offerstigende] & he swa gemetfiestlice & swa ymbseawiendlice
hine sylfne on eallura bingura beheold Æaet = 322. 27:
—atque aetatem moribus transiens, ita . . . gereret ut (or pred.?)—
16. 8: Æt se . . . b. onfonde . . . sume stowe mynster on to
timbrianne, & Æa mid halgum gebedum & ēaste Drihtne
gehalgode = 174. 22: Ut idem episcopus locum . . . accipiens . . .
Domino consecraverit.

NPM. (3):—312. 23a & b: we wuldriad userne D. swa swa
Æas wuldredon . . . noht toatecende Æde onweg ateonde =
240. 18a & b: glorificamus D. siect . . . nihil addentes uel sub-
strahentes.—312. 25: Æa Æe heo onfengon we eac swelce onfoð . . .
wuldriende God Fæder, etc. = 240. 20: suscepinus,
glorificantes Denum, etc.

GSN. (1):—426. 30: gehled & ceahetunge swa swa unge-
lærdes folecs & biosmriendes gehaetum heora feondum =
306. 10: cachinum crepitantem quasi uulgi indocti captis
hostibus insultiatis.

APM. (2):—54. 31: sende munecas mid hine Drihten
ondredende = 42. 21: misit monachos timentes Dominum.—
358. 10: Ac forðon Æe he ne wolde Æy ærran geare gehyran
Æone arwyrdan fæder Ecgberht, Æet he Scoottas hine noht
seeðsende ne afhehte = 267. 7: sed quoniam noluerat audire
Æ., ne Scottiam nil se ledentem impugnaret.
Note.—In Bede\(^1\) 430. 18 (in ðære ic eæ swylye ða swetestan stæfne geherde Godes lóf *singenda* = 307. 31: in qua etiam uocem *cantantium* dulcissimam audĭn) we have a substantivized participle with an object.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (73).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (60).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (47):

NSM. (14):—318. 1: ðæt . . . lícþoma *beþyrgcd* brosniæ ne meahte = 243. 24: *sepulta* caro corrumpĭ non potuit.—Other examples:—400. 25: *beþyrgcd = 290. 15: obectus*; 396. 20: *forsþerdc = 288. 9: defunctus*; 442. 22: *ge-eadmodēd = 314. 10: humiliatus*; 8. 23\(a\): *gehaľd [MS. B.: wæs gehæfd] = 37. 5: detentus*; 442. 23: *geniþercdn = 314. 12: damnatus*;—*geseted = positus*, 20. 27 = 268. 20 & 444. 5 = 314. 21; 10. 10: *geworden = 48. 1: factus*; 260. 7: *hætn = 205. 28: iussus*; 278. 18\(b\): *ib. = 216. 16\(b\): invitatus*; 92. 17: *oferswicþed = 71. 23: victus*; 352. 13: *onbryrded = 264. 11: compunctus*; 278. 18\(a\): *onfongen = 216. 16\(a\): susceptus*.


NSN. (1):—78. 15: wiif in blodes flownesse *geseted = 52. 1: in fluxu posita*; *ib. 78. 28 = 56. 5*.

MS. M. or N. (1):—150. 13: . . . mæl & cælic . . . gehal-gad = 126. 9: *calicem . . . consecratum*.

NS. N. or F. (1):—262. 22: *ræl & monewild gesended = 207. 21: clades missu*.

NPM. (7):—164. 7: *offet heo styhecemælum aæfedde . . . beboda onfon meahte (MS. Ca.: mihten) = 137. 17:

NPN. (2):—140. 3: væron eac gefulwade oðer his bearn of A. sære cwene *acende* = 114. 25: Baptizati sunt alii liberi eius de A. *progeniti*.—182. 23: wæs geworden ðætte sære seolfan nealhte ða *brohton* (MS. B.: *gebrohtan*) ban ute awunedon = 148. 17: factum est ut . . . reliquiae *adlatae* foris permanerent (may be attrib.).

DSF. (1):—320. 7: cwemon heo to sumre ceastre *geho- renre* noht for ðonon = 245. 1: uenerunt ad ciuitatum quondam *desolatam*, non procul inde sitam.

DSN. (1):—338. 32: in oðrum münstre fyrr *gesettum* = 257. 2: in alio longius *posito* monasterio.

ASM. (8):—312. 27<sup>a</sup>: we eac svelce onfoð, wuldriende God Fæder & his Sunu ðone acennedal of Fæder acennedne ær worulde = 240. 21: . . . glorificantes Deum & filium eius unigenitum ex Patre *generatum*.—Other examples:—288. 12: *bewundenne* = 222. 14: *inuolutum*; 380. 24: *forðferedne* = 279. 14: *defunctum*; 22. 16<sup>b</sup>: *gebrysedne* = 289. 4<sup>b</sup>: *contritum*; 88. 15: *gebunenne* = 61. 23: *ligatum*; 246. 7: *geleredne* = 194. 25: *instructum*; 94. 14: *genunnene* (MS. B.: *genumenne*) = 79. 9: *sumtum*; 130. 33: *gesetum* (MS. B.: *gesellan*) = 110. 9: *positum*.

ASF. (3):—58. 25<sup>a&b</sup>: Bæron . . . anlicnesse Drihtnes Hælendes on brede *afægde* and *awritene* = 46. 2: ðerentes . . . imaginem . . . in tabula *depictam*; 484. 28: *geðyldde* = 359. 29: *adjectum*.

ASN. (3):—122. 12: Hæfile he . . . twiæge handseax *geættred* = 99. 3: qui habebat sicam bicipientem *toxicatam*.—Other examples:—106. 7: *gehalgod* = 86. 12: *dedicatum*; 314. 14: priuilegium of *sære* apostolican aldorlicnesse *getry-med* (MS. Ca.: *getrymed*) = 241. 14: . . . epistulam priuilegii
ex auctoritate apostolica firmatam (getrymede due to close following of firmatam?).

APM. (1):—296. 7: Geseah he . . . ðry wæpnedmen to him cnaman mid beorhtum hræglum gegyrede = 226. 21: Uidit enim . . . tres ad se uenisse uiros claro indutos habitu.

NSN. (1):—272. 6: Is ofer his byrgenne stowe treowgeweor on gelincesse medmicles huses geworht, mid hrægle gegyrewed = 212. 17: Est antem locus idem sepulcri tumba lignea in modum domunculi facta co-opertus.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (3):

NSM. (3):—342. 4ᵃᵇ: In ... mynstre waes sum broðor syndriglice mid godeumdræ gife genawed ð gewcorðad = 258. 28: In m. fuit frater quidam diuina gratia specialiter insignis; 88. 25: geneded = 62. 2: invitus.


NSM. (1):—16. 15: Æt E. se halga wer of Angecynnes cynne accened munnalif waes leadende on Hibernia = 191. 26: Ut E., uir sanctus de natione Anglorum, monachicam in H. uitam duxerit.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (8):

NSM. (5):—20. 28: Æt se wer on ancerlife geseted ... gelaedd = 271. 3: Ut idem in uita anachoretica ... produxerit. Ib.: 22. 7ᵃ = 281. 2. [Cf. geseted = positus in 20. 27 = 268. 20, 444. 5 = 314. 21.]—Other examples:—114. 14: geswenced & wær [MSS. B. & C.: waes] = 92. 17; 258. 28: haten ('called') = 205. 15; 434. 24: haten ('called') = 310. 6.

ASM. (1):—14. 5: Æt se ylea cyning biddende ... biscope (MS. B.: byssceop) onfeng Aidanum on naman gehatenne = 131. 4: Ut idem rex postulas antistitem ... aceeperit Aidanum. [Cf. 158. 12: him biscope sendon, Aidan
The appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon. 165

wæs haten = 131. 15: accepit namque pontificem Aedanum.]

APM. (1):—328. 7: ða stafas mid him awritene hæfde (or pred.?) = 250. 28: no Latin equivalent. [MS. B. omits awritene.]

APN. (1):—108. 17: ða ðing ðe ðær gedemed wærón ... wrat and fiestnade ond eft hwearf to B. ða mid hine on Ongolciricum to healdenne awriten brohte = 88. 22 (or pred.?).

II. With an Object (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12):—

NSM. (3):—214. 11: eft onlysed ðy lichoman byrneð = 166. 4: ita solutus corpore ardebit.—Other examples:—

478. 1: eldo formumen = 349. 29: consumtus aetate; 440. 20: witum underðeoded = 313. 3: penis subditus.

NSF. (1):—332. 16: Forðon ðe ... Hereswið ... regollicum ðeodscipum underðeoded, baad ðone ecan sige = 253. 10: Nam H. ... regularibus subdita disciplinis expectabat.

GSF. (1):—172. 26: Þisse fiemnan Gode gehalgodre monige wære ... gewuniað ... sægd beon = 143. 1: Huius autem virginis Deo dicatae solent, etc.

GPF. (1):—284. 32: in ðara fiennena mynstre Gode gehalgodra = 220. 26: in virginit Deo dedicatarum cella.

DSM. (1):—16. 12: Se cyning for ðam sige sealdan him ... seald, etc. = 129. 11: pro adepta victoria ... dederit.

DPF. (1):—14. 15: be E. and A. Gode gehalgedom fiennun = 142. 2: de E. and Æ., sacratís Deo virginibus.

DPN. (1):—24. 22: mid him ðam underðeoddum mynstrum = 346. 14: cum subjectis sibi monasteriis (or atttrib.?).

ASF. (1):—252. 2: ne ðonne nemne medmicel dæl hlaifes and an henne sæg mid litle meolec wætre gemengede he onfeng = 175. 30: cum paruo lacte aqua mixto percipiébat.

ASN. (1):—344. 28: ðy betstan leoðe geglenged him asong

APN. (1):—212. 23: Gesæah he ec feower fyr onæled on ðære lyfte noht miele fece betweoh him toseæaden = 165. 20: . . . quatuor ignes . . . non multo . . . spatio distantès.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):

NSF. (1):—236. 29: Þa eode seo . . . dohtor . . . Gode *gehalygod* in sæt mynster = 179. 1: Intrauit filia Deo *dedicanda* monasterium.

---

**BOETHIUS** (27).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (17).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NSM. (1):—14. 16: se broc, ðeah he swife of his rihtryne, ðonne¹ ðer micel stan *wealhriende* of ðam heohan munte oniinan fealð & hine todælð & him his rihtrynes wiðstent = 23. 16: Quique uagatur montibus altis defluus annis, sæpe resistit rupe *solutæ* obice saxi.

NSF. (1):—81. 27: Swa ða gesceope ða saule ðæt hio seoeldæ ealne weg hwærtian on hire selfe, swa swa eall ðæs rodor hwerfð, oððe swa swa hweol onhwerfð, *smeagende* ymb hire seoeggend oððe ymbe hi selfe = 71. 13: Tu triplcis medium naturæ cuncta moventem conectens animam per consona membra resoluis. Quae cum secta duos motum glomeranuit in orbes, in semet *reditura* meat mentemque profundam circuit et similii convertit imagine caelum.

2. The A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which verb is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):

¹I have expanded the contractions of this text.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 167

NPM. (1) — 108. 14: irnād hidres ðidres *dvoligende* under ðæm hrofæ eallra gesceaftra = 93. 78: sed circa ipsam rerum summam uerticemque *dilliant* nec in eo miseris contingit effectus quod solum dies noctesque moliuntur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (2):


4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds loosely to a Latin substantive in the nominative (1):

NPM. (1) — 74. 31: *dvoliende* = 67. 9: *error* etc.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):


6. The A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (9):

NSM. (9): — 3. 7: Hu B. hine *singende* gebæd; *singende* cwað: 9. 29, 46. 2, 48. 22, 60. 27, 71. 4, 8. 5 (singend—), 73. 22 (singinde—); 17. 14: *sorgiende* anforlete.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

B.— THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (10).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (10).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (3):

GPM. and N. (2): — 11. 27, 28¹: Ne me *na ne lyst* mid glase *geworchtra* (or attrib.?) *waga* ne *heahsetla* mid golde & *mid giminnum* *gerenodra* = 19. 21: ... *comptos* ebo *ae nitro* parietes.

ASN. (1): — 133. 22: *God seleð ægðer* ge *good ge yfel* *gemenged* = 112. 140: *mixta*.

NS. F. or N. (1):—91. 8: wuht . . . Æ unge ned ly ste for weor ðan = 78. 45: nullis cogentibus.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb (1):

NSM. (1):—46. 27: se nama mid feaum stafum aw riten = 47. 17: s ignat nomen literis.


NP. F. or N. (1):—100. 22: gesceatha hiora agnum willum unge nedde him wären under ði ðodde = 83. 47: voluntaria sponte.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (4):

NSN. (1):—131. 27: ge menged = 111. 96 (cf. 133. 22: ge menged = 112. 140: mixta).

NPM. (2):—30. 25, 26: S so ne sint hi Æ plioleran & ges wi ne ful ra hæfd S onne wæfd.

GPF. (1):—11. 28: bo ca mid golde aw riten ra = 19. 21 (an ap. ptc. occurs in the Latin of this sentence, but not correspond ing to aw riten ra).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

GREGORY1 (82).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (58).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT. (56).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):

NSM. (2):—261. 11: Se i lca swi g e nde gesa fo de swing e ll an = 196b1: tacitus flagella toleravit; 225. 22: Se altig e nde = 170b: retractantes.

1 In this text a refers to the top and b to the bottom of the page.
NSN. (1):—431. 18: Swa bið sæt mod sleepende gewundad swa hit ne gefret, ðonne etc. = 356a: Mens quippe a cura suae sollicitudinis dormiens verberatur et non dolet, quia etc.

NPM. (3):—405. 31: Ac ða hie wendon hêra bêc to him, ða hie ofermøddiende his gebod forhogdon = 326a: superbiens ejus jussa contemnit.—Other examples.—259. 19: suigende = 196a: taciti; 171. 9: ðærhavenende = 126a: inhaerentes.

DSM. (2):—399. 14: Segor gehaside Loth fleondne = 318a: Segor civitas, quae fugientem salvet infirmum.

Note.—In 159. 18 (saet hi ðonne gehieran ³reagende of ðæs larioves ðuðe hu micle byrðenne hie hablað on hiera scyldum = 116a: ut cum culpa ab auctore non cognoscitur, quanti sit ponderis, ab increpantis ore sentiatur) ³reagende, as Cosijn suggests (vol. 2, p. 97), is doubtless used adverbially. We should expect the genitive, ³reagendes, to agree with larioves. Compare the use of ³reatigende in 315. 23, etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb either is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle that has been turned into an A.-S. finite verb (6):—

NSM. (5):—93. 6: Hit is awritten ðæt he scolde inn-gongende & utgongende beforan Gode to ðam halignessum beon gehiered his sueg, ðylæs he swulte = 62b: Scriptum quippe est: "Ut audiatur sonitus, quando ingreditur et egrediatur sanctuarium in conspectu Domini, et non moritur."—151. 24: he hit him ðeah suigende gesæde = 110a: et hoc ipsum tamen, quia tacuerit, dixit. [Just before this, however, occurs tacens et quasi non videns].—369. 4: siofgende cwse = 286a: queritur dicens.—315. 23: ðreatigende cwæð = 244a: redarguit dicens.

NPM. (1):—215. 7: unwillende = 162a: quae non appettunt.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (18):


NSN. (1):—433. 6: Sæet is sæit hit [= mod] da gedanan undeawas swincende gebete, & da ungedanan foredoneslice becierre = 358a: ut et præsentia laborando subjiciat, et contra futura certamina prospiciendo convalescat.


4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (1):—

NPM. (1):—191. 4: sæet hie wel libben[de] gode bisene astellen sæm de him underSiedde sien = 142a: discant ... isti quomodo etiam commissis sibi exempla bene vivendi exterius praebeat.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (7):—

NSM. (4):—397. 27, 28: Ne cweðo ic no sæt sæt ic ær cwæð bebeodende, ac lerende & gedøjende = 316a: Hoc autem dico secundum indulgentiam non secundum imperium; 253. 6: geomviende = 192a: in dolore.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 171

NSN. (1):—417. 11: geðafigende = 338b: ex deliberatione.
NPM. (2):—415. 6: Wuton euman ær his dome andet-
tende (or pred.?) = 336a: Praeveniamus faciem Domini in
confessione; 123. 16: weaxende = 286a: ad interitum.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
substantive in the ablative of manner or of means (6):—

NSM. (4):—415. 18: & he ða hi swa unrote oleccende
to him gelocode = 338b: tristemque blanditiis delinivit.—
Other examples:—53. 16: egesiende = 30a: terroribus;
53. 16: hiertende = 30a: favoribus; 379. 23: hreowsigende =
294b: magna voce pascientiae.

NPM. (2):—185. 7: is cynn ðette we for hira modes hælo
olicende hi on smylnesse gebringen mid ure spræce = 138a:
dignum est, ut ad salutem mentis quasi dulcedine citharae
locutionis nostrae tranquilitate revocetur; 117. 17: suigende
= 82a: tacita cogitatione.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
adverb (1):—

NPM. (1):—381. 25: . . . Godes ðegnas, ða ðe unwandi-
ende ðæra sceyldegena gyltas ofslogen = 296a: qui delinquent-
tium secela inueniunt ferirent (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
indefinite (3):—

NSM. (2):—403. 6: Forðæm se ðe hine selfne maran
godes behæt, & ðonne forhæt ða maran god, & went hine to
ðæm læssum, ðonne bid hit swutol ðæt he bidfromlociende
oferswided = 322a: Tui igitur fortiori studio intenderat, retro
convincitur resipere, si relictis amplioribus bonis administrum
reterqueur.—61. 3: Se lace bid micles to beald & to scom-
leas ðe gæð æfer oðra mouna husum lacenigende (or pred.?),
& hæfð on his agnum nebbe opene wunde unlacnode = 36a:
Si ergo adhuc in ejus opere passiones vivunt, qua presumtione
percussum mederi proprat, qui in facie vulnus portat?

NPM. (1):—297. 4: Sua, ðonne ðonne hatheortan hie
mid nane foreðonc nyllad gestillan, ac sua wedende folgiað
hwam sua sua Assael dyde Æfinere, & næfre nyllad gesuican,
Sonne is micel ðearf etc. = 224a: Sed cum iracundi nulla consideratione se mitigant, et quasi Asael persequi et insanire non cessant; necesse est etc.


NSM. (1):—207. 22: Forðæm he spreac ðas word ðe he wolde ðara seamleasna seylda tolende geopenian = 156a: ut et illorum culpas inercpatrio dura detegeret.

10. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):

NSM. (3):—185. 9: æresð mon seal spreac ascienede.—153. 5: Ac Sonne se lareow ieldende secd Sonne timan etc.—39. 16: suigende he cwæð.

II. With an Object (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

NSM. (1):—99. 4: & sætte hie [Cotton MS.: he] sua hælicra ðinga wînigende ne fòrsio his nielstan untrume & seyldige = 68a: ne aut alta petens proximorum infirma despiciat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):

NPM. (1):—171. 13: ðæt is Sonne ðæt mon ða eare bere on ðæm saglum, sætte ða godan lareowas ða halgan gesomnunge larende ða niwan & ða ungeleaffullan mod mid hire lare gehðe [sic!] to ryhtum geleafan = 126a: Vectibus quippe arcam portare, est bonis doctoribus sanctam Ecclesiam ad rudes infidelium mentes praedicando deducere. [Cotton MS. has beoð larende.]

B.—The Preterite Participle (24).

I. Without an Object (23).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 173

NSM. (4):—443. 22: Ac ða he swa gebreged on eordan feoll, & acsode, & cwæð etc. = 370.\(^b\) Nam cum prostratus, requireret, dicens.—Other examples:—135. 23: gehæfegæd and ofersmæðæd = 96\(^b\): victam: 51. 1: unclesæd = 26\(^b\): non purgatus.

NPF. (1):—153. 1: Ac monige scylæ openlice witæ bacæ to forberanne = 110\(^a\): Nonnulla autem vel aperte cognita, mature toleranda sunt.

NPN. (2):—245. 8: Hwaet getæcnið ðonne ða truman ceastræ butan hwurfsæl mod, getrymedu and ymbtrymedu mid lytelicre ladunge? = 184\(^b\): Quid enim per civitates munitas exprimitur, nisi suspectae mentes et fallaci semper defensione circumdatae?

DPM. or N. (1):—155. 10: ðonne he ongiet be sunum ðingum ðæðæ ðæawum utanne actuedæ cæll ðæt hie innan ðenceæð = 112\(^a\): qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius apparentibus ita cords subditorum penetrat ut etc.

ASM. (2):—383. 32: gif mon on niwne we[a]ll unadrugodne & unastidodne micelne hrof & hefigne onsett, ðonne etc. = 300\(^a\): quod structuris recentibus neendum solidatis si tignorum pondus superponitur etc.

ASN. (1):—403. 20: ðæt hi hit huru tobcreen gebeten = 322\(^b\): bona... saltem scissa resarciant.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—

NPM. (1):—227. 25: ðæ... gefeothæð ðæt ðæt innan hira burgum fæste belocene ðær hiera giemeliste hie letað gebíndan = 172\(^b\): qui victores sunt, sed per negligentiam postmodum intra urbis claustra capiuntur.

NPF. (1):—407. 30: forðæm gif hie gedenceæð ðara geselðæ ðæ him ungeendode æfter ðæm geswincum becuman sculon = 328\(^a\): Si enim attendatur felicitas quae sine transitu attingitur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of cause (1):—

3
NPM. (1):—435. 2: gif hi fierlocor syngoden unbedöhte = 360a: si in his sola precipitâtione eccidissent.


NPM. (1):—109. 23: Hie sculon forðy ofdræd[de] . . . liegean astreæhte etc. = 76a: quia videlicet etc. ex ea debent etiam formidini jacere substrati.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):

NPM. (2):—117. 23: . . . sua . . . sua we for monnum orsorglicor ungewilnode syngiað = 82a: Tanto . . . quanto apud homines inulte peccamus.—137. 19: Ungeniedde, mid cowrum agenum willan, ge sculon ðencean = 98b: non evaque, sed spontane etc. [Or are both pure adverbs?].

6. An A.-S. appositive participle loosely corresponds to a Latin substantive in the nominative (2):

NPM. (2):—302. 10: unmidlode and aðundene = 228b: effrenatio etc.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):

NSM. (2):—227. 21: & he ðonne sua gebunden . . . sargað etc. = 172b: ut plerumque vir patiens . . . captivus crube-scat; 317. 12: ungeðingod = 244b: repentina (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):

NPM. (1):—105. 1: . . . clrenran ðonne hie . . . væren, mid ðæm tearum ðara gebeda aðweagen.

DPF. (1):—343. 8: æhtum gereafodu[m].

II. With an Object (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the accusative (1):

ASM. (1):—197. 20: hit no gedæfenlic nære sæt hie slogon Gode gehalgodne kyning = 148a: fregit eos responsi-
onibus, quia manum mittere in Christum Domini non deberet (or attrib.?).

**Orosius** (21).

A.—The Present Participle (16).

I. Without an Object (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (4):—

NSM. (2):—200. 32: he him *wepende* (Sære bene) getygSade, for Són &e (he) secolde Italian forlétan = 201. 30: *flens* reliquit Italian; 240. 9: *wepende* wænde ᵀa umare = 241. 8: *deplorans* injurias.


2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive (2):—

NSM. or N. (2):—166. 17, 18: *ægSær* ge he(self) *wepende* hamweard for, ge *Sæt* folc *Sæt* him ongean com, call hit him *wepende* hamweard folgade = 167. 8: . . . ad cujus conspectum *plagentium* junguntur agmina.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (2):—294. 11: *hiene* siSæan mid rapum be sær sweoran up aheng, gelicost sær ᵀe he hiene self(nc) unwitende hæfde awierged = 295. 8: *strangulatus*, atque ut *voluntarium* sibi conscivisse mortem putaretur, laqueo suspensus est (notice the mistranslation); 40. 18: *fleonde* = 41. 16: *profugum*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (6):—
II. With an Object (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):

NPM. (1):—32. 21: geforan Roðum sæt igland, wilniende sæt hi ælæm gewinne ðæflæn hærfon = 33. 19: credentes quod se . . . abstraherent, Rhodum insulam . . . ceperunt.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (1):

NSM. (1):—52. 27: sôna ðæes folces ðone maestan ðæl fleonde mid ealle forlædðe [ðæl seems to be the object of forlædðe as well as of fleonde].

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (5).

I. Without an Object (5).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NPF. (1):—14. 18: ðæes landes is xliii [sic] ðeoda, wide toscelæn for unwæstumærenæsæ ðæes londes = 15. 20: gentes sunt quadraginta duae, propter terrarum infsecundam diffusionem late oberrantes.

ASN. (1):—168. 14: swa he hit him eft ham bebed on anum brede awritten etc. = 169. 10: . . . per tabellas scriptas etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

DPF. & M. (1):—88. 13: Æfter ðæm wæs an ger full sæt ofer call Romana rice seo corðæ wæs cwæiciende & berstænde & ælæ daæge mon com unarimedlice oft to (ðæm) senatum, &
him sedon from burgum & from tunum on eordan besuneen = 89. 10: Per totem fere annum tam erebri, tamque etiam graves in Italia terrae-motus fuerunt, ut de innumeris quassationibus ac ruinis villarum oppidorumque assiduis Roma nuntiis fatigaretur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):
NPM. (2):—92. 30: bewopene; 250. 14: ungeniedde.

II. With an Object (0).
No example.

PSALMS, THORPE (24).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (20).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):
NSM. (1):—17. 3: herigende ic elypige to ðe, Drihten = laudans invocabo Dominum.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):
NSM. (1):—50 Int. (= Introduction): hreowsiende = Bruce 93: Sub occasione pænitentiae.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (2):
NSM. (2):—34 Int.\textsuperscript{1,2}: ma witgiende, ðonne wyrgende ðe wiutniende = Bruce 86: non malevolentia optandi, sed praescientia prophetandi.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):
NSM. (1):—34 Int.\textsuperscript{3}: wyrgende = Bruce 86: malevolentia.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):
NSM. (2):—30 Int.: gebiddende to; 5. 7: hopiende to.
II. With an Object (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin absolute clause (1):
   NSM. (1):—38 Int.:—seofigende = Bruce 87: Angentibus . . . moeroribus.

   NSM. (1):—34 Int.: siafigende = Bruce 85: Occasione orumuarum suarum.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (11):
   NSM. (11):—37 Int.: andettende; 28 Int.: bebecende;
   33 Int.: geheunde; 39 Int.: gylpende; 32 Int.: herigende (cf. 17. 3, where herigende = laudans);
   47 Int.: mycliende; 37 Int.: seofigende, ib. 43 Int.; 32 Int.: sanciende, ib. 45 Int.; 31 Int.: wundriende.

B.—The Preterite Participle (4).

I. Without an Object (4).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):
   APF. (2):—44. 15: beslepte and geyrede = circumamicta.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):
   ASN. (1):—20. 3: astcened = de lapide.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):
   DSN. (1):—41 Int.: folce gehaeftum etc. = Bruce 89: populus captivus etc.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 179

THE CHRONICLE* (46).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (13).

I. Without an Object (9).

NSM. (2):—1097 Eₐᵇ (p. 233ᵇ): Ḍa uppon saunte Michaeles massan iii+N° October ætywde an selcuð steorra on æfen seynende & sona to setle gangende (or pred.).

NPM. (7):—1069 Dₐᵇ,c (p. 201ᵐ): & heom com ðær togenes Eadgar cild & Waldæof eorl & Ærræwsægan & Gospatic eorl mid NorSymbrom & ealle ða land leoden ridende & gangende (or both pred.) mid unmætan here swīðe fægængende & swa calle anrældlice to Eosferwic foron.—1075 Dₐᵇ (p. 210ᵐ): ac he sylf & his ferestan menn ferdon eft ougan to Scotlande, sune hrowlice on fotan gangende & sune earmlice ridende (or both pred.).—1123 E (p. 251ᶜ): & riden ðær spreçende (or pred.). Ḍa aseh dune se bispoc etc.—1086 Eₐ (p. 218ᵇ): & twegen halige menn ðe hyrsumedon Gode on ancersettle wuniende ðær wæron forbærnde.

II. With an Object (4).

NSM. (1):—1087 E (p. 223ᵐ): Ḍas Sing gesonde se arwurða bispoc Wlstan weard swiðe gedrefed on his mode.

NPM. (1):—1083 E: & sune crupon under & gynne cleopedon to Gode, his miltse biddende.

ASN. (2):—656 Eᵇ (p. 33ᶜ): seo papa seonde ða his writ, ðus cwaxend: Ic Uitalianus papa etc.—Cf. 675 E (p. 35ᵇ): And seo papa seonde ða his gewrite to Englalande, ðus cwaxend.

Note: Latin Participles in The Chronicle.—Several instances of a Latin appositive participle occur in the Chronicle but are not translated into A.-S.: 431 E: apparens; 625 E: constans.

*The superior letters outside the parenthesis distinguish the several examples of the same year; those inside the parenthesis are explained by Plummer.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (33).

1. Without an Object (33).

NSM. (12):—1104 E (p. 239): on ȳam Tiwæscēge ðæer æfter ætweadan fewer circulars to ȳam middæge onbutan ðære summæ hwites hwesæ, ælc under oðran gebroiden swylce hi gemette wæron.—50 F: Her Paulus gebunden weerð gesend to Rome (or pred.?).—755 F: ðæer broðer, Cyneward gehaten, ofslōh Cynewulf on Merantune. So: 604 A (or pred.?), 777 E, 1130 E.—Other examples:—1118 E and 1127 E: gewundod; 1154 E: hwæd (or post-positive attrib.?); 3 A: ofsticol; 1086 E: ungederæd (or pred.?); 1048 E: unsweican (or pred.?).

NSN. (1):—1127 E (p. 256): ðæer wasæ se Scottæ kyng Dāvid & eall ðæt ðæt waes ðæt wæs on Engle-lænd. [May be considered plural as by Plummer.]

NPM. (15):—1066 D (p. 199m): ðæa Engliscan hi hindan hetelice slogon oððæt big sune to scype coman, sune adruncen & sune eac forbornde & swa mislice forfarene, ðæt ðæer waes lyt to late.—Other examples:—gewadode: 995 F, 1012 E, 1095 E, 1102 E; 449 A: geleaXade; 1083 E: gevepnedode (or pred.?); hadode: 1014 E, 1023 D, 1046 E (manig mann ðæerto ge hadode ge læwedæ); 1096 E: hungérbittenæ; 911 A: unbefohtenæ (or pred.?); 1070 E: wepndode.

GSM. (1):—1100 E (p. 235b): ælces mannes gehadodes & læwedæs.

GPM. (1):—656 E (p. 29b): be his broðer reæd . . . & be al his gewiten reæd, hæred & laewedæ, ðæo on his kynerice wæron.

DSM. (1):—1053 C: se Wulfwi feng to ȳam biscoprice ðæo Ulf hæflæ be him lībbendum & ofdærafldum.

ASN. (2):—992 E: & ðæt scip genamon call geweppnod & geweodæ.

II. With an Object (0).

No example.
Note.—As the examples show, in many instances the participles (both present and preterite) above cited from the Chronicle are in immediate juxtaposition with intransitive verbs like ætewean and faran; hence even more examples than those queried may be predicative rather than appositive.

THE LAWS (19).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

ASM. (1):—Ine, c. 35: Se de deof slilæ, he mot ade ge-eyðan, sæt he hine fleoundne for deof sloge.
ASN. (2):—Cnut ii, c. 24, Int.a,b: nan ðinge . . . ne libbende ne liegende.

Note: Accusative Compounds.—Three accusative-compound participles occur in the Laws:—Ine, c. 45: Burg-bryce mon seal betan . . . gesiðundes monnes landhæbbendes xxxv; and Ine, c. 51a,b: Gif gesiðund mon landagende forsitte fierd, geselle cxx scill. and ðolie his landes; unlandagende lx scill. As the examples show, however, the participles are used attributively rather than appositively.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—Wihtræd, c. 18: Preost hine clænsie sylfies soðe, in his halgum hrægel ætforan wiofode, ðus eaweodende: "Ueritatem dico Christo, non mention."

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (15).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (1):—Ine, c. 39: Gif hwa fare unaliæfed from his hlæforde (MS. B. has unaliæfeð, which is perhaps a pure adverb).
II. With an Object (0).

No example.

BENEDICT 1 (72).

A.—The Present Participle (63).

I. Without an Object (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12):

NSN. (3):—2. 18: and ðæs acsiende cwyð = 4. 21: Et quaerens Dominus . . . iterum dicit.—Other examples:—
47. 16: arisende = 88. 17: surgentes; 52. 9: wuniende mid upahfrednesse = 98. 2: elatus.

NPM. (9):—47. 12: hy butan eleunge arisende cafolio gehwylc oðerne forestæppe and to ðæm Godes weorce esfe = 88. 13: absque mora surgentes festinent.—Other examples:—
62. 15*: drincende = 118. 2: bibentibus; 62. 15*: etende = 118. 1: comedentibus; 134. 17*: libbende = 231. 8: victantes; 135. 23*: sittende = 231. 36: sedentes; 138. 2*: wurhuniende = 233. 22: persistentes; wuniende (fram) = remoti, 134. 18* = 231. 11; = stantes, 135. 23* = 231. 35; 137. 14*: wyrcende = 233. 6: operantes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):


NPM. (1):—68. 21: wen is, ðæt sume oððe sleadice lagon and slepon, oððe sittende mid idelre spellunge dofele to micelne forwyrdes intingan gesealden = 130. 4: erit forte talis qui se aut recollocet et dormiat, ant certe sedeat sibi foris, vel fabulis vacet, et detur occasio maligno.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of means (1):

NSM. (1):—71. 7: butan he ðærihte beforan eallum hine dælbetende geæðmede = 134. 15: nisi satisfactione ibi oram omnibus humiliatus fuerit.


5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NPM. (1):—9. 7: geleornið ðæt hie anstandonde . . . ongean deofol . . . winnan magan = 14. 4: et beni instructi . . . jam sine consolatione alterius . . . contra vitia pugnare sufficiunt.

*All starred references are to the Appendix of Benedict¹.
6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (7):

NSM. (4):—31. 14: _geomriende clypude = 58. 13; 24. 6: smeayende gehealde = 46. 24; 4. 15*: tremegende = 8. 21;
60. 1: cwende . . . Sanciende = 112. 3.

NPM. (3):—132. 1: _betende = 204. 3; 2. 10: _elciende = 4. 15; 135. 6: _swindende = 231. 20.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):

NSM (11):—22. 15: _wið ðone unðeaw hine bewarode se witega, ðus cweðende = 44. 16: quod se cavere Propheta indicat, _dicens._—So cweðende = _dicens:_ 4. 7 = 8. 13; 24. 14 = 48. 7.—Other examples: 26. 14: _geefenlcecende = 52. 5:_ imitans; 4. 15: _gefyllende = 8. 21:_ complens; _gehyrende = audiens,_ 2. 19 = 4. 25, 15. 6 = 26. 17; 30. 3: _healdende = 56. 19:_ habens; 27. 2: _ne lactende = 52. 10:_ sustinens; 54. 9: _ondraende = 100. 14:_ timens; 4. 15*: _wyrcende = 8. 21:_ complens.

NSF. (1):—2. 9: _sio godennde stefn myngaS and clypaS, ðus cweðende = 4. 14:_ divina quotidie clamans quid nos admoneat vox _dicens._


NPM. (10):—64. 13: we ðeah manna untrumnesse and tydernesse _sceceanende _gelyfaS, ðæt _etc._ = 122. 5: _Tamen infirmorum contuentes imbecillitatem, credimus._—Other examples: 134. 24*: _aseyriende = 231. 16:_ remoti; 135. 27*: _begylende = 232. 2:_ captantes; 59. 21: _biddende = 112. 2:_ postulantes; 4. 3: _elciende = 8. 10:_ dicentes; 70. 7: _elciende = 132. 14:_ dicens; 3. 14: cweðende = 6. 17: dicens; 11. 8: _forholiende = 18. 21:_ contemptentes; 27. 22: _gefyllende = 54. 5:_ adimplentes; 87. 5: _secgende = 154. 7:_ dicens.
2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb generally is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (7):

NSM. (6):—25. 10: elypiende = 50. 3: dicit; eweSende = dicit, 11. 6 = 18. 18, 26. 2 = 50. 20; ib. = ait, 21. 9 = 42. 8; ib. = dicit, 51. 14 = 96. 9; ib. = dicant, 82. 24 (Wells Fragment) = 152. 5.

NSN. (1):—22. 10: elypiende = 44. 12: clamat.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NPM. (1):—134. 13*: ðe . . . westestowa and ælætu and anwunnung gelufiæ géfenlacénde Elian etc. = 231. 6: ad imitationem seilicet Eliae.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (5):

NSM. (2):—4. 10: elypiende = 8. 16; 101. 6: fiestniende = 166. 16.

NPM. (3):—131. 15: awyrpende (MS. F.: awyrpen) = 204. 1; 6. 1: géfenlacénde = 12. 2; 138. 8: ðieygende = 233. 27.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (8).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):

NSM. (2):—2. 3: gegremed = 4. 6: irritatus; 28. 2: geondead = angaritia: 7. 54.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):

NSM. (1):—34. 2: æfter ðam fylige capitel of ðæra apostola lare gemyndelice butan bee gesæd = 64. 7: Lectio sequatur, ex corde recitanda.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—
NPM. (2):—44. 22\textsuperscript{a} & 22\textsuperscript{b}: eala &ær we asolecene and avacode on aure wucan gehesten = 82. 26: quod nos tepidi utinam septimana integra persolvanus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (3):—

NSM. (1):—28. 6: geneadod = 54. 9 (cf. 28. 2, where geneadod = angariati).

NPM. (2):—11. 16\textsuperscript{a} & 16\textsuperscript{b}: getrymede and anbryrde = 20. 5.

II. With an Object (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):—

DPM. (1):—25. 16: and nu fram ßam englum us betectum ure weorc... beoð gebodude = 50. 13: et ab Angelis nobis deputatis... opera nostra muntiantur.

THE BLICKLING HOMILIES (52).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (36).

I. Without an Object (27).

NSM. (10):—235. 12: Ond ßus cweðende se halga Andreas asette his heafod ofer ænne his discipula & he onslép.—Other examples:—133. 17: cwenende; 193. 8: dwolgende; 249. 20: efstende (or pred.?); 113. 29: gnorngende (by Flamme classed as pred. (§ 169), by Morris translated as appos.); 179. 20: leogende; lociende: 229. 28, 245. 8, 245. 16; 231. 9: ßurhweiganigende.

NSF. (5):—5. 8\textsuperscript{a} & 8\textsuperscript{b}: Gehyron we nu to hwylecum gemete seor arwyrðe fæmne & seo halige, on hire cantice gefeondes and blissigende, sang & ßus cwæd.—7. 16: ßæt Maria... smeade & swjigende ðohite hwæt seo halettung waren. [Flamme (§ 169. 2) classes swigende as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: "and silently considered." Swigende may be considered an adverb.] 249. 1\textsuperscript{a} & 1\textsuperscript{b}: hrymende, wepende.
NSN. (1):—199. 17: Da wæs he mid yrre swiðlice onstyred, forðon ðe hit [= hryðær] swa wedende code, & swa ofermodlice færde. [Flamee (§ 169) classes wedende as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: "because it had gone about so madly and had behaved so arrogantly." Clearly wedende is coördinate with ofermodlice, and may like it be classed as an adverb.]

NPM. (5):—225. 17: cumað arisende wulfas, todriðað ðine heorde.—Other examples:—gefonde: 201. 10, 203. 2 (or pred. ?), 207. 8 (or pred. ?); 239. 27: ingangende.

NPN. (1):—243. 5: and ingangende on ðæt careorn hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihðe ðæs eadigun Andreas.

DSM. (2):—115. 18*: we him fleondum fylgeðæ. —245. 3: ðus gebiddende ðam halgan Andrea Drihtnes stefn wæs geworden on Ebreise, eweðende.

DPM. (2):—171. 11a–b: swa him Drihten Crist, eallum rihtgelyfdum mannum wunigendum for his noman, & surhwunigendum in tintregum on soðre andetnesse ðo ende his lifes untwoegendlice, gehæt & ewæð.

ASM. (1):—115. 18b: & hine feallendne luðfað. 

II. With an Object (9).

NSM. (4):—239. 22: he gesæt be ðam swere anbidende hwæt him gelimpan seolde (or pred. ?); 249. 17a–b: he ðær wunode mid him seofon dagas, kerende and strangende hira heortan on geleafau . . . Cristes.—57. 7: spiwende.

NSF. (2):—eweðende: 229. 27, 245. 4.

NPM. (1):—133. 27: Swylce is geeweden ðæt hie calle on yppan wunedon, ðonen bidende ðæs Halgan Gastes.

NPN. (1):—243. 7: hie [=ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihðe ðæs eadigun Andreas, and hine bismriþende mid myclere bismre, and hie ewædoun.

ASM. (1):—215. 21: eweðende.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (16).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (4):—89. 34b: raðe he lifgende ut eode of his byrgerne mid his ageare mihte aweht.—87. 36: & befealden to Hælendes eceowum he cweð.—Other examples:—187. 28: gebeagod; 225. 33: getrymed.

NSF. (1):—197. 20: Æonne is ðer on neaweste sum swiðe mære burh betwih ðære sæ seo is nemned Adriaticus on ðæm munte Garganus geseted se is haten Sepontus.

NPM. (5):—85. 9: Hie ða swiðe forhte & abregde ðus ewedon.—Other examples:—221. 28: *gegyrede; 221. 28b: gescelldode; 221. 28b: gesperdode; 171. 28: geweorðode.

NPF. (1):—209. 36: he geseah ðæt on ðæm clifre hangodan on ðæm is gean bearwum manige sweorte saula be heora handum gebundne. [Flamme (§ 174. 2) says this wavers between appos. and pred.]

NPN. (1):—127. 33: Swylce eac syndon on ðære myclan cirican ehta eagðyrelu swiðe mycele of glæse geworht. [Flamme (§ 173) thinks that geworht is possibly predicative, but Morris translates it as appositive.]

ASM. (2):—11. 7: Arweordian we Crist on binne asetene; 181. 1: beheafddodne.

APF. (1):—31. 20: ðas dæda ðus gedone from Drihtne (but the text is corrupt).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

DSF. (1):—197. 6: se ðe is on calra ymbhwyrfte to weordienne & to wuldrienne his ciricean, gehweðer ge his agen geweorc ge on his naman gehalgod (but the passage is corrupt).

Note.—The text is too corrupt to construe ahafen in 115. 32.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 189

ÆLFRIC'S HOMILIES,* THORPE (676).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (477).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (203).

NSM. (90):—II. 78b: se sceana on hine gelyfende his synna geandette. So: I. 62b; II. 130a,—II. 132b1&2: se biscop, seinende on... geearnungum and... gedincendum, on heoefan rice, mid Æelm Sc. on eeere blisse rixiende wuldra. So seinende: I. 466; II. 352a2, 502b1.—Other examples:—I. 386a2: andbidigende; I. 390b3: arisende; I. 226b: astigende; II. 136a: awegifrende; II. 176b: bifigende; blissigende: I. 340a1&2, 580b, 596a4&5, II. 426; II. 300b1: byrnende; I. 516b: uucigende; I. 124b: dwarbetende; drohtni(g)ende: I. 398b, II. 546b1; II. 82b: ehtende; jiegnigende: I. 596a1, II. 312a3; II. 442b: fieren; jeallende: I. 380b2, 390b2; forhtigende: II. 40b, 142b2, 176b2; förstappende: I. 278a, 500a2, II. 90a1; II. 360b: fumigende; II. 176a4: gesonde; I. 56b1: gewitende; I. 410b: gyddigende; II. 246a1: haftigende; hangi(g)ende: I. 594a1, 596b8, II. 256a, 260b; I. 380b3: hrosende; II. 302a: hrymende (or pred.2); II. 152b1: liegende; II. 474b: lutiende; lybende: II. 152b2, 364b1, 500a2, 502b1; I. 54b: miltsigende; II. 182a2: onbesonde; II. 134a: plegende; I. 294b: roerdigende; sittende: I. 346a1, 548b, II. 134b2, 382b1; II. 500a1: smagende; II. 138b2: standende; suwi(g)ende: II. 230a, 350a2; I. 480b: sweltende; I. 338b2: syngigende; I. 596b7: tihende; trui(g)ende: I. 2b, II. 478a1; I. 374b: scotende; II. 168b3: sytigende; II. 204b1: surhwiugigende; II. 130b3: underfonde; II. 140b3: uforhtigende; II. 164b: wedende; I. 52b: welweilende (or adverb?); wepende: II. 134b; writende: II. 332b1, 348a1; wunigende: I. 134b, 150b2&3, 232a, 326b, 346b2, II. 142b3, 440b, 498b1; I. 432a: yrsigende.

*The superior letters (a and b) refer respectively to the top and the bottom of the page; the superior figures distinguish the several examples. 4
NSF. (11):—1. 438b1 & 2: heo drohtnode gemænelice mid ðam apostolicum werode, infarende and utfarende betwux him.—Other examples:—1. 98a2: donde; 1. 146b: tybbende; 1. 66b1: varigende; 1. 440a1: smeagende; 1. 564a2: uflo- wende; wepende: 1. 566b1, 11. 146b; 11. 434b: writende; 11. 182b4: wunigende.

NSN. (7):—1. 372b2: ðæt fole ða mid anre stemne clytipigende cwæð. So: I. 594b2.—Other examples:—1. 566b2: blissigende; II. 140a3: brasstigende; II. 450b: hroesende; II. 142b1: sprecende; I. 296b: wunigende.

NS. M. or F. (2):—I. 546b1 & 2: fyligde heap... manna...

Surhwunigende, to Criste geðeodende.

NS. F. or N. (1):—I. 324b1: gecynd... wunigende.

NPM. (62):—I. 610a2 & 3: Sind eac sume stecoran loht- beamede, fierlice ariosende and hrædluce gewıtende.—I. 592b1 & 2: ðære ge synle blissið, blowende and mid Criste rixigende. So rixigende in I. 500b.—Other examples: I. 534b: bibli- dende; blissigende; I. 56b4, 564a; II. 258b: bugende; I. 596b4: clipigende; II. 454a1: oumende; I. 68b: daedbetende; drohtni(y)gende: I. 536b, II. 158b2, 296b2, 404a: doelicigende; I. 340b, II. 124b; feallende: I. 38b, 560a2, II. 126b, 214a, 236b, 246b1; II. 34a2: feohende; II. 334a1: fleogende; I. 352a: forstæppende; II. 130b1: geliyende; I. 46b: hrymende; II. 138a3: lieyende; I. 544b2: lutigende; II. 130a4: lybbende; miltigende: I. 370b, 540b; I. 78b2: niðserfeallende; scinende: II. 136b1, 496b; I. 606a3: singende; sprecende: II. 248b, 284a2; II. 136b2: stymende; II. 212b: suwigende; sveltende: II. 34a3, 554a; I. 496b2: synigende; I. 606b1: tæcende; I. 606b2: tihtende; I. 84a1: upaspringende; I. 334b5: wældi- gende; wedënde: I. 50b1, 470b, II. 232b; II. 454b2: wepende; wunigende: I. 150a3, 228b2, 238a, 338a (cf. Abs. Pte. in A.-S., p. 11), 406a2, 544b1, 610b, II. 204b2; II. 236a: yrigende.

NPN. (2):—II. 336a: ða deoflu feohende scuton heora fyrenan flan ongean ða sawle;—II. 350b3: hlihende.

NP. M. or N. (1):—I. 60a1: wers and wif... fagnigende.
GPM. (2):—i. 30b²: wear $\#$ geseven micel menigu heofon-
llices werodes God herigendra and singendra (or substan-
tive?). So: i. 38a²

DSM. (4):—i. 494a: and elypigendum Drihtne to $\#$am ecan life cafllice geandwyrt (or Abs.? Cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 10).—i. 324b³: to $\#$am geleaffallan heape, on $\#$ysre worulde wunigende.—Other examples:—i. 362a: cumendum (or Abs.? Cf. Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 10); ii. 180b¹: ridendum.

DPM. (6):—ii. 186b¹ & ²: cyðde his forðsið on ær sumum his learning-enihtum mid him drohtinigendum and sumum oðrum on fyrfenum stowum wunigendum.—Other examples:—
gelyfendum: i. 228a; II. 284a: onlociendum; II. 284a: sprecendum.

DDM. (1):—ii. 172b²: ne ætowode ic ince bam slapendum?

ASF. (2):—i. 376$: se dry worhte $\#$a ærene næddran, styrigende swylyee heo cucu ware; II. 344a²: byrnende.

ASN. (2):—II. 508b¹: cwæð $\#$et he hit [= treow] under-
fenge feallende to foldan.—II. 150a: liegende.

APM. (4):—II. 246b: feallende; I. 334b¹: liegende; II. 154a: lybbende; II. 242b²: sittinge.

APF. (2):—II. 350b¹ & ²: $\#$a deoflu geæddon fift manna sawla, hrewolice gnorniende and grimetende, into $\#$am fyre.

2. WITH AN OBJECT (274).

NSM. (176):—II. 142a: $\#$a begann se wer dreorig wepan, anðraegende $\#$as ungelimpes.—II. 188$: stod sum arwurðe wer mid . . . gyrlum, axigende etc.—II. 164a²: Benedictus . . . tæhte him $\#$æs dædbote, bebeodende $\#$et etc.—I. 372b²: Se apostol genealæhte $\#$am lice mid aðenedum cærum, $\#$us biddende. So: I. 126a, 418b, 428¹ (w. gen.), 434b (ib.), 452a (ib.), 456b, 464b¹, 598a³, II. 26a, 110b, 134b³, 138a, 144b², 180b², 304a², 304b, 418a², 498b² (w. gen.), 504b².—I.
62\textsuperscript{a}: Johannes besaeh ðus eowenden (eowenden). So: i. 50\textsuperscript{b,2}, 66\textsuperscript{b,3}, 78\textsuperscript{1,1,4,5}, 88\textsuperscript{b,1}, 98\textsuperscript{a,1}, 120\textsuperscript{a,2} b, 124\textsuperscript{a}, 126\textsuperscript{a}, 192\textsuperscript{a}, 206\textsuperscript{a}, 208\textsuperscript{b}, 222\textsuperscript{b}, 242\textsuperscript{a}, 264\textsuperscript{a}, 294\textsuperscript{a}, 314\textsuperscript{b}, 324\textsuperscript{b,2}, 328\textsuperscript{a}, 350\textsuperscript{a}, 358\textsuperscript{a,1,2}, 364\textsuperscript{a}, 366\textsuperscript{a}, 370\textsuperscript{a}, 376\textsuperscript{b}, 380\textsuperscript{b,1}, 390\textsuperscript{a}, 390\textsuperscript{b,1}, 404\textsuperscript{b}, 406\textsuperscript{a,1}, 418\textsuperscript{b,2}, 430\textsuperscript{a}, 436\textsuperscript{b}, 442\textsuperscript{b}, 450\textsuperscript{b}, 450\textsuperscript{b}, 480\textsuperscript{b,2}, 502\textsuperscript{b,2}, 510\textsuperscript{b,2}, 520\textsuperscript{a} (= dicens), 522\textsuperscript{a,2} b, 530\textsuperscript{a}, 534\textsuperscript{a}, 538\textsuperscript{b,1}, 548\textsuperscript{a}, 550\textsuperscript{a,2}, 560\textsuperscript{b,3}, 568\textsuperscript{a,1,2}, 568\textsuperscript{b,2}, 570\textsuperscript{b}, 572\textsuperscript{b,2}, 576\textsuperscript{a}, 596\textsuperscript{a,3}, 600\textsuperscript{b,1}, 604\textsuperscript{b}, 606\textsuperscript{b}, 760\textsuperscript{a,4}; ii. 10\textsuperscript{b,2}, 12\textsuperscript{b,2}, 14\textsuperscript{a}, 16\textsuperscript{a}, 34\textsuperscript{a,4}, 52\textsuperscript{b}, 62\textsuperscript{a,2}, 72\textsuperscript{b}, 84\textsuperscript{a,1}, 112\textsuperscript{a,1,2}, 182\textsuperscript{b,1}, 268\textsuperscript{b}, 288\textsuperscript{a}, 312\textsuperscript{b}, 328\textsuperscript{a}, 384\textsuperscript{a}, 400\textsuperscript{a,1}, 406\textsuperscript{b}, 414\textsuperscript{b,2}, 418\textsuperscript{a,2}, 428\textsuperscript{a,1}, 428\textsuperscript{b}, 432\textsuperscript{a}, 464\textsuperscript{b}, 468\textsuperscript{a,1}, 538\textsuperscript{a}, 542\textsuperscript{a}, 562\textsuperscript{a}, 576\textsuperscript{a}.—Other examples:—i. 540\textsuperscript{b,1}: belenevende; bigende: II. 298\textsuperscript{b}, 408\textsuperscript{b}; ii. 184\textsuperscript{b,1}: blissigende; botli\(g\)ende: i. 370\textsuperscript{b,1}, 560\textsuperscript{a,1}, ii. 130\textsuperscript{a,1}; ii. 414\textsuperscript{b,1}: bysmrigen\(g\)ende (w. dat.); i. 48\textsuperscript{a}: elypigende; i. 66\textsuperscript{a,2}: ferigende; ii. 446\textsuperscript{b,2}: forbugende; ii. 130\textsuperscript{a,2}: forhugi\(g\)ende; ii. 168\textsuperscript{b,1}: forhjugende; ii. 352\textsuperscript{a,3}: fyljgende (w. dat.); ii. 418\textsuperscript{b,1,2}: gegealvevende; i. 78\textsuperscript{a,2}: gehyrrende; ii. 376\textsuperscript{a,1,2}: getaenigende; halbbende: i. 126\textsuperscript{a}, 130\textsuperscript{a,2}; ii. 432\textsuperscript{b}: herigende; hevende: i. 370\textsuperscript{b,2}, 596\textsuperscript{a,2}; i. 400\textsuperscript{b,1}: liecetende; i. 600\textsuperscript{b,2}: manigende; ii. 320\textsuperscript{a}: ofse\(v\)æ\(w\)igende; ii. 446\textsuperscript{b,1}: ond\(v\)æ\(d\)ende (should on standende?); recevende: ii. 350\textsuperscript{a,1}, 356\textsuperscript{b}; i. 388\textsuperscript{b}: sawende (or pred. ?); se\(v\)æ\(w\)i\(g\)ende: ii. 32\textsuperscript{a,2}, 120\textsuperscript{a,2}; secende: i. 338\textsuperscript{b,1} (or pred. ?), ii. 358\textsuperscript{b,2}, 448\textsuperscript{b}; i. 596\textsuperscript{b,2}: se\(v\)æ\(g\)ende; i. 388\textsuperscript{b,1}: se\(v\)æ\(n\)ende; ii. 138\textsuperscript{b,1}: syngende; ii. 334\textsuperscript{b}: sme\(v\)æ\(g\)ende; ii. 182\textsuperscript{b,3}: sverigende; sme\(v\)æ\(l\)igende: ii. 400\textsuperscript{b,2}, 466\textsuperscript{b}; ii. 540\textsuperscript{b,2}: to\(n\)æ\(d\)ende; ih\(t\)hende: i. 528\textsuperscript{a,1}, ii. 328\textsuperscript{b}; ii. 326\textsuperscript{b}: to\(c\)ly\(g\)igende; to\(d\)æ\(l\)ende: i. 322\textsuperscript{b} (w. dat.), ii. 338\textsuperscript{b}, 344\textsuperscript{a,1}; i. 106\textsuperscript{b}: to\(n\)væ\(w\)igende; ii. 128\textsuperscript{b}: se\(v\)æ\(w\)igende (w. dat.); se\(v\)æ\(g\)ende: ii. 170\textsuperscript{b}, 256\textsuperscript{a,2}; i. 608\textsuperscript{b,1}: undery\(g\)mende; ii. 346\textsuperscript{b,2}: wæ\(l\)ni\(g\)ende (w. gen.); wraet\(t\)ende: ii. 272\textsuperscript{b,3}, 364\textsuperscript{b,2}; i. 572\textsuperscript{b,1}: wyr\(v\)æ\(c\)ende.

NSF. (16):—i. 76\textsuperscript{b}: Seo endlæfte tid bið seo forwerode ealdnyss, ðam deaðe genæ\(k\)æ\(c\)ende.—Other examples:—arow\(n\)i\(g\)ende: i. 30\textsuperscript{b,3}, 42\textsuperscript{b,1,2}; biddende: i. 66\textsuperscript{b,2}, 566\textsuperscript{b,2}, ii. 184\textsuperscript{a,1}; eowenden: i. 104\textsuperscript{b,1}, 194\textsuperscript{b}, 388\textsuperscript{a,2}, 426\textsuperscript{a,3}, ii. 42\textsuperscript{a}, 432\textsuperscript{b,2}; heore\(n\)igende: ii. 438\textsuperscript{b} (w. dat.), 440\textsuperscript{a,2} (ib.).—i. 98\textsuperscript{a,3}: ond\(v\)æ\(d\)ende; ii. 182\textsuperscript{b,3}: se\(v\)æ\(w\)igende.
NSN. (8):—π. 578b: folc ham gewende, sancigende ðæm Ēlmihtigan ealra his goda.—Other examples:—biddende: i. 68a, ii. 140b; cweðende: i. 200a, 594b, ii. 110a, 114a; ii. 256b: sreagende.

NS. M. or N. (1):—π. 342a: sang . . . cweðende etc.

NPM. (61):—i. 38a3: hi . . . godum mannum sibbe bodedon, swutellice atecowende ðæt etc.—Other examples:—π. 200b: anbidigende (w. gen.); π. 548a: andswariende; befriende: i. 78a, 104a (= dicentes); biddende: i. 74a, 562b, π. 30b, 160b2, 176a, 396b, 484a, 486b; π. 252b1: bigende; bodigende: π. 492b1; π. 506a: cyðigende; cweðende: i. 4a, 64a, 68a2, 510a1 (= dicentes), 538a4, 560b3, 596b5, π. 112a3, 172b1, 252b2, 300a, 484b, 488a1; π. 168b2: cyðende; π. 534b2: drineende; π. 492b3: dwelidende (or pred.?); π. 534b1: etende; i. 588a: ferigende; i. 526b: gadrigende; π. 226b: gæwehælende; π. 560a3: gehyrsumigende (w. dat.); i. 90b: habbende; healdende: i. 528a2, 538b3; herigende: i. 32a2, 42b; π. 474a: leasetende (or pred.?); maerigende: i. 544a2, i. 194b; π. 248b2: meldigende; π. 34b1: ofeswisan-ende; π. 490b2: onlihtende; π. 248a: sleænde; π. 426b1: swingende; sancigende (w. dat. and gen.): i. 102b, 606b4, π. 272b1; seowigende (w. dat.): π. 70b, 310b; π. 250b1: wregende; wundrigende: i. 32a, 42b3; π. 130b3: wundrigende (w. gen.); π. 490b1: wyrcende.

NPN. (4):—π. 56a: Æt ðæm giftum waron gesette six stenene waterfatu, healdende ænligige twyfealde gemetu odde ðryfealde.—π. 548a: stodon twa heofonlice werod ætforan ðære cytan dura, singende heofonlicne sang (or pred.?);—cweðende: π. 414b3, 416a2.

NP. M. or N. (1):—i. 60a2: weras and wif . . . cweðende.

GP. (2):—i. 30b1: weares gewesu micel menigu heofonlícswerodes God herigendra. So: i. 38a1.

DPM. (1):—π. 440b1: swa swa he behet eallum him šenientum.

APM. (4):—i. 334b2: Manega Lazaras ge habbað nu liegende æt eowrum gatum, biddende eowre oferflowend-

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (199).

I. Without an Object (194).

NSM. (94):—II. 182a: he ðæ earle abliged aweg tengde.
—I. 10a: ðæs ðrynny is an God; ðæt is se Fæder and his wisdom of him sylfum æfre aceaned. So: I. 34b, 150b1, 222a, 278b2, 464b2, 500a, II. 42b3, 204b3, 366a.—Other examples:—
II. 352a1: afyllæd; II. 510b: afyrht (or pred.?); I. 550a1: ahefen; alangen: II. 598b, 696b; astreht: I. 426b2, II. 186b3; 
II. 332b3: wælbore; I. 434a2: awed; II. 254b: awend; I. 598b: aworpen; II. 120a1: befangen; I. 426b2: bfrinen; 
I. 56b2: bewæfæld; II. 382b3: fornomen; I. 66a1: foresyldigod; 
II. 42ab: fulfremed; I. 594b1: geæbyld; I. 414b2: geæcumod; II. 250b2: gebolgen; gebyl: II. 390b, 412b2: gedrefed; I. 414b1; II. 140a: geflogen; gefrætetewod: II. 118a; II. 306a1: gefultod; I. 52a2: gefultumod; geglency(c)ld: II. 512b2, 518b2; II. 130b2: gehadod; II. 244a: gehalgod; gehaten: I. 502a, II. 152a2, 304a1, 308a1, 332b2, 348a2, 412b1, 488a2; gehathyr: II. 374b, 424b; II. 250b2: geælded: I. 128a, II. 54a1; II. 270b: geliffæst; II. 250b1: golgod; gelysed: II. 152a1, 332b4; I. 468b2: gemartyrød; II. 158a: gemenged; II. 348a3: genebygod; I. 588b: geneadod; II. 24b: geripod; II. 42b2: gesceapen; gescryld: I. 528b, 578b (or pred.?), II. 312b3, 382b2, 512b1; gesell(l): I. 126a3, 130a1, 218b1; II. 234a: gesworen; I. 428b: getogen; I. 614b: gedread; II. 36b: geswigung; II. 516b2: gewæcht; gewæpned: I. 450b2, II. 334a2, 502a; geworht: I. 278b1, II. 42b1; I. 426b1: gewreged; II. 518b: gewuldrod; I. 52a1: ofterfod; II. 150b: onbryrod; I. 290a: rihghtyfæld; II. 514a: toswollen; II. 372a: unabeden; II. 204a1: unbegwennen; I. 428a2: ungeazod; II. 336b: ungeñederod; II. 204a2: ungeenedod.

NSF. (14):—II. 546b3, 548a1: Hire modor, Redempta gehaten, stod hire ofer, micelum afyrht for ðam heofonlican
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 195

leohete. So gehaten: II. 284a, 306a, 584a.—Other examples:
—i. 446b: ahafen; II. 58a: astreht; i. 502b: aðrawn; i. 60b: awerht; i. 90b: forfredene; II. 138b: gelaðod; II. 308b: getintregod; II. 498b: geworht; II. 586b: ymbscryd (or pred.?).

NSN. (16):—i. 184b1 & 2; ða fif hlafas wæron swyliche hit sæd wære, na on eorðan besawen, ac gemenigsgeld fram ðam ðe eorðan geworhte.—Other examples:—II. 572b: afyrht; II. 494b1 & 2: agoten; i. 352b: becloysed; II. 140b: bepaht; II. 326b: forseyldgod; II. 272b: geblodgod; gehaten: II. 312b, 438b; i. 508b: gescryl; II. 508b: gesett; II. 510b: gesylht; II. 140b: ofscamod; II. 510b: loslopen.

NS. F. or N. (1):—i. 42b: genymnd ... geswetelod.

NPM. (20):—i. 608b: ðæt we huru his genealæwendan dom, mid mislicum swinglum aferede, ouredon.—Other examples:—II. 326b: acennede; i. 98a: acryrede: asende; i. 348b1 & 2, 540b; i. 560b: fordemde; fornumene: II. 246b, 348b; i. 84b: forsdene; i. 566b: gedrehte; ii. 298b: ge-glengede; i. 504b: gelærde; i. 10b: gesceapene; i. 538b: gescriyde; II. 396b: geweht; II. 246b: gewepnode; i. 526b: gewiriðene; i. 544b: gewunode; i. 610b: leoh-beamed.

NPF. (3):—II. 174a: Twa myneceenna wæron droht-nigende on gehendnyse his mynstres of æwelboreere mægðe asprungene.—Other examples:—ii. 366b: bepahte; ii. 298b: geendode.

NPN. (3):—II. 380a: deoﬂu, ðe feollon to his fotum, mid fyrhte fornumene (or pred.?).—II. 326b: comon cwelmhere deoﬂu swutellice gesewene, on sweptum hwe, in to ðam cilde.—II. 354b: He befran ða hwam ða gebythu gemynhte wæron, swa maerlice getimbrode.

GPM. (1):—II. 290b: geladunge gecorenra manna to ðam ecan life.

DSM. (2):—II. 546b: G. awwrat be sumum gedýldigan were, Stephanus gehaten.—II. 308b: æt foran ðam casere, Aurelianus genamod.
DSF. (2):—II. 494a: becomon to anre heafodbyrig, Suanir gehaten;—II. 546b2: be sumere myneeeyne, Romula gehaten.

DPM. (1):—II. 286a: Sume gecwendon englum on heora gesthusum underfangenum ðurf cumliðnyssse.

ASM. (21):—II. 596b1,2,3: Te gelyfe on ænne Crist, Hælend Drihten, ðone ancemedan Godes Sunu, of ðam Fæder ace ned aer calle worulda, God of Gode, Leohht of Leohht, ðoðne God of ðodum Gode, ae nedene na geworthnæ. So ace nedene: i. 198a.—II. 168a1: asende his sunum boran, Riggo gehaten {sic!}. So gehaten = an accusative: II. 358a1, 468a2 (eo nomine), 480b, 492b2.—II. 162b1: asende him ænne fæcan to lace mid ætrenæ. Other examples:—II. 112b: befangenne;—II. 598b2: forlorenæ; II. 92a: foræstæ;—II. 280a: gebrodæ; II. 252a: gecigedæ; II. 120a2: geendebyrdæ; I. 210b: gefreatewodæ; I. 330b: geglenegedæ; II. 416b2: gehærefæ; gescrydeæ: II. 168a2, 500b.

ASF. (2):—II. 182a2: se halga wer hæfde ane swustor, Scolastica gehaten; II. 124a: afandode.

ASN. (7):—II. 264a2: Ne ete ge of ðæm lambe van ðing hreaew, ne on wætere gesoden, ac gebroed to fyre. So gesoden: II. 278b1.—Other examples:—II. 260b2: gedeced; II. 198b: gefiodæ; I. 42a2: gehalgod; I. 134b: gelacod; I. 42a1: gewemmed.

APM. (3):—II. 516b1: oððæ hwam betehst ðiu us na forlætæ?—Other examples:—II. 486b1: gedrehte; I. 568b1: gescrydde.

APF. (3):—I. 68a1 & 2: ge begeaton eow ðeasterfille wununga mid draenum afyllede, and . . . mid . . . witum afyllede.—I. 506b: ða gesawon hi æftoran ðære cyrcan norðura, on ðam marmanstane, swiloc mannes fothæsta fieslice on ðam stane geðylde. [Though Sweet and others give fothæst as masculine only, it seems to be feminine here. See, too, I. 508a.]

APN. (1):—I. 218a2: se sacerd bletsian secele palmtwigu and hi swa gebletscode ðam folce delan.
II. **With an Object (5).**

NSN. (1):—I. 594a²: śū ceaf, ecum ontendyssum ge-
geareod, gehyr me.

NPM. (1):—I. 544b³: deorum gefertliche, to engelicum
spræcum gewunode, on micclum wundrum seinende wæron.

NPN. (1):—II. 314a: manega sind beboda mannnum gesetle
(or pred. ?).

GSF. (1):—II. 292a: tihð ðurh miltsunge him forgæfeor
mihte (or Abs. Dat. ? See Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 11).

APM. (1):—II. 598b¹: gescyld ðine ðeowan ðinum mæ-
gendrymme underdæodht.

Note: Latin Participles occur as follows:—(1) untranslated:
credentes, persuadentes, secuti, in Pref. to i.; (2) translated:
dicens (dicentes) = cweftende, i. 510b¹, 520a = befænende in i.
104a;—raptum = se wæs gegripen, ii. 332a;—circumdata =
ymscyrð, ii. 586b.

---

**ÆLFRIC'S LIVES OF SAINTS (543).**

A. **THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (335).**

I. **Without an Object (129).**

NSM. (54):—442. 24: com se arwurða swyðun to sumnum
... smyðe on swefne æteowende wurðlice geglencged.—
xxviii. 6: ðe casere wæs cene and reðe and deofolgild
beode dwollice libbende.—182. 182: he sona wearð hal
beorhte locigende se ðe blind wæs.—Other examples:—478.
92: blyssigende; xxiii. B. 199¹: clypigende; 156. 134:
drohtingende; xxiii. B. 640: cyfyrrende; 448. 100: fængi-
gende;—feallende: 396. 222, xxviii. 114; 282. 5: feohtend
[sic]; xxiii. B. 199²: forðgangende; 14. 77: forðsteppende;
xxiii. B. 645: gedrysthwæcente;—hangi(g)ende: 428. 212,
227, xxix. 254; xxiii. B. 733: havigende; heofende:
xx. 180; xxiii. B. 366: hlikhende; 526. 617: hlydende;

NSF. (37):—xxiii. B. 431: ic cwæð to hire geornlice and unforburgendlice behealdende and eveþende.—xxiii. B. 472: mine onewa gebige beforan ðam halgan andwihan ðysum wordum biedende.—212. 34: Heo aras ða biþigende for ðære beorhtan gesiðæ (or pred.?). So: xxiii. B. 461.—


NSN. (5):—78. 468: wunode an meðen meðelice droht-nigende geond feowertig geare fee þægge gehealden.—Other examples:—xxvi. 159: feallende; 88. 652: flitende; 184. 242: grymetende; 44. 327: wunigende.

NPM. (17):—98. 154: ða ðæðen ða hæðengeydan into heora temple eþypigende hlude to ðæm leasan gode.—226. 110: ðæ eþpodon ðær ðry weras ðweigende æt ðæm geate.—

Other examples:—438. 99: blysigende; 514. 445: dreori-
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 199

gende; 192. 379: drohtniende; xxiii. B. 115: gereoronde; 110. 338: gitiniende; 240. 18: libbende; liegende: 54. 62, xxv. 496; xxv. 513: ridende; 326. 83: sprecende; xxv. 779: standende; 326. 100: sancigenende; 94. 77: seonde; xxvi. 186: wundrigende; 70. 330: wunigende.

NPN. (4):—224. 86¹²: binnan ðam weron calle cuce nyten creopende and gangande (or pred.).—Other examples:—xxvii. 39: dynigende; xxiv. 53: grymetende.

DSM. (2):—14. 79: Nis nanum menn on . . . life libbendum nanes Stinges swa mycel neod.—xxiii. B. 673: Æs mid tearum biddende, him eft oðer gedane on befooll ðas evede. [I omit he after Æs, as does Skeat’s “B.”]

DSF. (3):—212. 40: forgif me ða to ehenynsse to criste favrendre.—xxiii. B. 752: geic eac gebiddan sæalhweardæ for me of Æyssere worulde hloorende on ðam mondæ etc.; —36. 185: liegendre.

ASM. (2):—78. 489: gelædde hine on mergen forð swiðe fægres hiwes buton ælcan womme and wel sprecande;—78. 481²: unsprecende.

ASF. (2):—334. 216: Se sang geswuteda ða halgan ðrynnysse on æure godcundnyssæ æfre wunigende; ib. xxix. 5 (?).

APM. (3):—388. 80: se cyning sende swyðe fæla ærendracan to . . . eardum embe ðæ axiende.—Other examples:—xxx. 429: gebiddende (or pred.); 32. 130: liegende.

II. With an Object (206).

NSM. (114):—xxvi. 137¹²: he ðærænnan wunode godes lof æværende and gerihtlocende ðæt folc.—xxiii. B. 96: ðas weorc Zosimus behæaldende hine sylfne geornlice to fullfremynysse ædæned[e] gemang ðæm ennwyrhtum. So:—xxx. 233.—60. 166: [he] com to basilie biddende fulluhtes.—62. 193: Ða asende se ealdorman sona to basilie, biddende, earmlice ðæt etc.—78. 487: ac se bisecop . . . wacode ealle ða niht mid ðam wædlan hroflian, biddende ðone hælend
set he etc.—410. 443: Da . . . mannases . . . to sam
ælmihtigan elypte, biddende miltsunge calra his mandæda.
Other instances of biddende: 66. 278, 106. 278, 122. 115, 224. 69, 312. 80, 314. 109, 316. 135, 420. 95, 448. 103, 458. 273, xxiii. B. 719, xxv. 487, xxvii. 212, xxix. 56.—96. 91: he him asende ðisne froser ðus cwæcende etc.
So cwæcende (cwæcende): 22. 190, 154. 106² (or pred.?), 182. 203², 250. 212², 314. 109, 364. 3, 378. 216, 386. 29, 408. 417, 444. 64; xxiii. B. 667², 668², 670, 674, xxiv. 103, xxvi. 100; xxx. 45, 98.—Other examples:—xxiii. B. 161: aheb-
benende; xxiii. B. 672: berende; xxiii. B. 796²: bletsigende;—
ningende (w. gen.): 220. 28, xxvi. 56; wuldrigende: xxiii. B. 629¹, 679, 796¹, xxvii. 217; wundriende (w. gen.): 54. 77, 56. 98; wurSigenende: xxvii. 105, xxix. 232; wyrcende: 78. 494², 470. 472².
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 201


NSN. (5):—xxiii. B. 595: ac godes word is ecua and searp, innan laere unde ðis mennisc sceal andgyt.—Other examples:—biddende: 60. 171, xxv. 716; xxiii. B. 324: cweftende;

NPM. (44):—472. 9: gebugon to fulluhte behrousigende heora synna.—Other examples:—biddende (w. g. or ac.): 46. 357 (?), 70. 334, 138. 352, 240. 40, 242. 75, 400. 258, 448. 121, 452. 188; xxv. 336, 768; xxix. 172; xxvi. 79: bodigende; 136. 305: clypigen; vewizen; xxx. 140, 144, 245; xxix. 192: cyßende; xxvi. 238: feccende; xxviii. 10: folgiende (w. dat.); xxiii. B. 139: gefyldende; gesconede: xxiii. B. 377, xxx. 184; 148. 24: halsigende; heri[e]gonde: 70. 349 (or pred.?), 102. 222, 110. 338, 351, 142. 403; mereigende: 26. 37, 230. 162, 242. 51 (or pred. ?); xxv. 495: secotende; 54. 56: secende (or pred. ?); seccende: 146. 458, xxv. 121; ðancigonde (w. dat. & gen.): 114. 410, 132. 249, 438. 85, 460. 322, 478. 96, xxv. 453; 80. 526: wuldriigende; 184. 249: wurdigege. NP. F. or M. (1):—224. 66: wydewan and ðearfan... ðæ conigende.

GSF. (1):—xxiii. B. 426: ða ðe hran soслиce min mod and ða eagan minre heortan hælo andgit mid me sylfre
Sencende ðæt me ðone ingang behcen ða onfeormeganda (sic) minra miseada (but, as is evident, the text is very corrupt).

DSM. (3):—xxiii. B. 246: Ða forgeaf heo Zosime and-swarigende Amen. [The text seems corrupt. Skeat translates: "Then she gave Zosimus [her blessing, he] answering 'Amen.'" ]—xxiii. B. 674: Ðus mid tearum biddende, him eft ðon geðan on befcoll, ðus sceðende. [I here follow Skeat's "B" and omit he after Ðus.]—82. 540: Se wyle ðe gehyran me sceðende to him.

ASM. (2):—480. 143: het se foresed â dema gehadan ðone halgan on heardre racenteage feorr on wrescið ferigende on scipe.—xxx. 411: se casere . . . het hine ungyrdan and bewapnian and beforan his ansyne æsetand dan mid his wife and his cilcum swilce ofergægendne his hlaforðes bebob.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (208).

I. Without an Object (205).


NSN. (15):—78. 469: wunode an mæden mærlēc droht-nigende geond feowertig geare fec fægre gehaeduon.—298. 229: ðæt ðeðer folc sleah afyrht for heora breame.—Other examples:—xxvi. 183: astreht; xxv. 567: befangen; 236. 250: fulfremed; xxvi. 214: gebroođ; xxiii. B. 749: ge- eweden; 32. 134: geçyged; gehaten; 44. 327, 170. 71, 236. 249; gelyfes; 170. 72, 194. 2; 30. 94: unewe; xxiii. B. 285: ymbseald.

NPM. (37):—180. 167: ac hi . . . ablygede cyrdon to heora . . . hlaforde.—468. 437: Seah ðe ða Iudeiscan ðurf defol beneicene nollon gelyfan.—Other examples:—afyldede: 126. 168, xxviii. 60; afyrhte: 166. 317, xxv. 611, xxvi. 231, xxix. 305; 54. 53: alysde; 116. 25: ægelborene; xxvi. 95: cumene; fornumene: 58. 138 (or pred.?), 204. 148, 326. 96; 126. 167: geboren; 342. 73: gebundene; gebrylde: xxv. 488, xxvii. 149; 208. 216: gegeysode; xxv. 339: gehyrte; 318. 172: gleofede; gelyf(e)de: xxiv. 2, xxv. 109, xxviii. 15; 184. 245: gemartyrode; xxv. 558:
getemode; 460. 319: geuntrumode; gewepmode: 190. 359, xxv. 333; xxv. 559: gewenode; geworhte: 386. 38, 408. 386; 506. 300: ofdredde; 298. 228: ofhroe; xxv. 497: oflagene; 54. 58: onbryrde; xxiii. B. 571: totorene (but the passage is corrupt).

NPF. (1):—xxv. 813: on dysre worulde synd ðreo ende-
byrldysse on anuyss-e gesette; ðat synd etc.

DSM. (7):—462. 351: oððæt hi becomen to sumum ænlicum feld a fegre geblawen.—xxv. 757: sum leogere... sæde ðam caldormenn Apollonius geeiged.—140. 368: Nico-
stratus... weard... toforan ðam deman gebroht, fabianus gehaten. So gehaten: 224. 79, 402. 317, xxv. 331, xxvi. 121.

DSF. (11):—xxiii. B. 438: forðôn witoldlice genoh riht-
lic is me swa beasmilene fram õîrre ðënam ungewemmedlysse beon æscirod.—xxiii. B. 598: Nu õe õe... andbidde... ðat õu for me earmlicere forlegere gebidde.—54. 83: ge-
wendon to anre widgylan byrig, Antiochia geeiged. So geeiged: 146. 462.—54. 66: ferde to õere [flowenden] ea iordanis gehaten. So gehaten: 68. 325, 184. 264, 238. 11, xxv. 413, xxix. 4, 146.

DSN. (2):—196. 10: betæhhte hi anum fulum wife Afrodosia geeiged.—xxxi. 11: Martinus... ðæs geboren on ðam fiestene Sabaria gehaten.

DS. M. or N. (1):—172. 36: He gegliângde me mid orle of golde æwefen.

ASM. (20):—44. 350¹ & ²: Basilla hæfde enne hædene wogere, pompeius geeiged, swîðe æðelboren. So geeiged: xxix. 213.—312. 68: A... genam ænne mycelne bollan mid bealuwe aﬁlled.—xxvii. 11: forlet õa ænne dæl on õære ylean byrig õe Crist on õrowode, swa swa us cyðað gewritu, mid seólfre bewunden.—Other examples:—200. 75: gebigesne (or pred.?); xxiii. B. 661: gefylld- ðne; gehaten: 28. 67, 104. 230, 124. 125, 194. 409, 222. 42, 302. 277, 408. 396, xxv. 761, xxvi. 53, xxix. 204, 214; 78. 481¹: toswollen; 78. 482: uñafunden.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 205


ASN. (2):—92. 26: ða fundon his magas sum ægelboren mæden basilissa gehaten; 132. 258: uxtobroen.

APM. (1):—246. 146: uscyrddæ.


APN. (1):—24. 225: ealle lichamlicra ðinga hiw heo weag on hyre sylfre gehiwian, and swa gehiwode on hyre mode gehealden.

II. With an Object (3).

NSN. (1):—288. 71: forðan ðe heo gebedhus is, gode gehalgod.

ASM. (1):—xxiii. B. 676: Eala me ungesæligan swa rihtwislicre gesiðde afrendad me.

ASF. (1):—xxiii. B. 442: gefultuma me nu anegre ælces fylystes bedeled (MS. G: bedeledr).

Note: Latin Participles occur in 332. 191 (vox clamantis = élypiende stemn), 338. 33 (vir videns deum = ðat is on Engliscre sproscce: se wer ðe gode gesiðð), xxiii. B. 280 (putans = smeagende), xxiii. B. 287 (reducens = hæbbende).

ÆLFRIC'S DE VETERI ET DE NOVO TESTAMENTO (41).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (15).

I. Without an Object (5).

NSM. (4):—18. 32: he biþende feoll to ð. fotum (or pred.?).—20. 24: Bellatores . . . ure burga healdæ . . . feohende mid wænum; libbende (lybbende): 2. 26, 12. 40.

DPM. (1):—5. 34: [mete] him ælce ðæg com edniwe of heofenum feowertig wintra fyrst on ðam westene farenæde.
II. WITH AN OBJECT (10).

NSM. (7):—18. 33:\ he . . . feoll to i. fotum . . . biddende mitlungsuge.—Other examples:—16. 32: bodigende (or pred.?); 16. 10: evedende; 16. 30^2: lerende; 20. 10: seegende; veyr-eende (veirende): 15. 23, 16. 30^1.

NPM, (3):—19. 45: ðær ðær hig blissiað andbidiende git ðæs ecan lifes; heriende: 5. 28, 8. 27.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPE (26).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (26).

NSM. (13):—2. 9, 10: Her is seo halige ðrinnis on ðisum ðrinn mannum . . . se . . . fæder of nanum ðrinn geceumen, and se micha wisdom of ðam wisan fæder æfre . . . aecnom.—Other examples:—3. 25: adrenced; 13. 40: ahangen; 3. 2: aecnd; 2. 44: gefestnod; gehaten: 9. 20, 11. 4; 11. 5: gelyfed; 17. 24: gestrangod; 12. 34: geðogen; 18. 33^3: oferyoten; 18. 34: ofseoman.

NPM, (3):—20. 20: Laboratores sind yrþlingas and æhte men to ðam annum belicht etc. So: 20. 22.

NPF. (2):—14. 12: ðæt syndon ðreo bee mid lufe afyllede folce to lare; 11. 21: gehatene.

DSM. (1):—16. 24: binnan annum igoþe feor on wræesiþe, Pathmos gehaten.

ASM. (4):—3. 23: se æcealde his broðor Abel gehaten unsceiligne mannan. So gehaten = acc. sing. masc.: 7. 18, 8. 20, 11. 9.

ASF. (1):—15. 44: he awrat ða boc on his wræesiþe Apocalipsis gehaten.

ASN. (2):—7. 34^{k.2}: He aræde . . . ðæt . . . tempel . . . swa fægere getimbrod and swa fæste getrymmed; 7. 35: oferworht.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.
The Appositive Participle in Anglo-Saxon.

Ælfric's Heptateuch (99).

A.—The present participle (61).

I. Without an object (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (15):

NSM. (9):—Judges 4. 20: gif her ænig man cume acesi-gende embe me = cum venerit aliquis interroga-s te (or pred.?).—Gen. 19. 14: Da wæs him geduht, swilce he gami-gende spræce = Et visus est eis quasi ludens loqui.—Other examples:—ingangende = ingrediens: Deut. 28. 61, 191; Num. 22. 34: nitende = nesciens; Gen. 15. 17: smoci-endé = finnans (or attrib.?) ; Num. 16. 48: standende = stans; utgangende = egressi-ens: Deut. 28. 62, 192.

NSN. (2):—Ex. 2. 23: Israela bearn clypode geo-mriende for ðam weorcum = ingenioscentes filii Israel propter opera vociferati sunt; Job. 1. 19: hroescende = corruens.

NPM. (3):—Judges 15. 14: urnon him togeanes calle hlydende = Et cun Philisthiim vociferantes occurrissent ei (or pred.?).—Other examples:—Ex. 1. 71: spryttende = germi-nantes; Num. 16. 18: standende = stantes.

NPN. (1):—Gen. 8. 3: ða wæteru ða geceirdon of ðære cordan ongecan jarende = Reversæque sunt aquæ de terra euntes et redieantes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):

NSM. (1):—Gen. 22. 3: Abraham ða aras on ðære ylean nihte and ferde mid twam snapum to ðam fyrleneum lande and Isaac samod on assum ridende = Igitur Abraham de nocte consurgens stravit asinum suum, ducens secum duos juvenes et Isaac filium suum abiit in locum.

NPM. (4):—Num. 14. 45: and big micclum slogon and ehtende adrifon = et percutiens eos atque occidens persecutus est eos.—Other examples:—Num. 20. 30: beweopon geomeri-
ende = flevit (there is an ap. ptc. in the sentence); Josh. 8. 16: hryndon ridende = vociferantes persecuti sunt eos; Job 2. 12: hryndon wepende = exclamantes ploraverunt.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):

NSM. (1):—Gen. 24. 63: He eode ut on sæt land senende = Et egressus fuerat ad meditanum in agro.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (4):


NPM. (2):—Job 2. 12: cumende; Josh. 7. 6: licgende.

II. With an Object (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):

NSM. (12):—Gen. 1. 22: And bletsode hig, ðus cweðende = Benedixitque eis dicens. So cweðende = dicens: Gen. 2. 16, 8. 15, 17. 17; Ex. 3. 16, 5. 6; Deut. 32. 48, 34. 4.—Other examples:—Job 1. 8: yfel forbugende = recedens a malo; Job 1. 8: ondraendinge = timens; Job (Exposition), p. 266, l. 20: secende = quercens (for Latin cf. I. Peter 5. 8); Gen. 2. 6: wætrrende = irrigans.

NSF. (5):—Gen. 18. 12: (Sarra) hloh digellice, ðus cweðende = Quæ risit occulte, dicens. So cweðende = dicens: Gen. 15. 4; Num. 16. 41.—Other examples:—Num. 10. 33: sceveciende = providens; seeveciende = dicens: Gen. 15. 1.

NSN. (1):—Judges 6. 7: Swa Israela folc ða earmlice clipode to ðam . . . gode, his helpes biddende = Et clamavit Israel ad dominum, postulans auxilium.

NPM. (1):—Gen. 3. 5: ge boð ðonne englum gelice wilende ægðer ge god ge yfel = et eritis sicut dii, scientes bonum et malum.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 209

ASF. (1):—Gen. 1. 12\textsuperscript{1}: seo eor\dh{a} for\dh{a} ateah growende wirte and saed berende be hire cinne = protulit terra herbam virentem et facientem semen juxta genus suum.

ASN. (4):—Gen. 1. 11\textsuperscript{1,2}: Spritte seo eor\dh{e} growende gers and saed wircende and appeb\dh{e} treow wæstm wircende æfter his cinne = Germinet terra herbam virentem et facientem semen et lignum pomiferum faciens fructum juxta genus suum; \textit{ib.} Gen. 1. 12\textsuperscript{2}; Gen. 1. 12\textsuperscript{3}: habbende = habens.

APF. (1):—Gen. 1. 29: ic forgeaf eow eall gers and wyrta saed berende ofer eordan = dedi vobis omnem herbam afferentem semen super terram.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually either subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):

NSM. (1):—Deut. 4. 45: ... æ, ðæ Moises foresette and laga and domas, ðus evedende = ... lex, quam proposuit M., et ... judicia quae locutus est.

NSF. (1):—Josh. 10. 6: ða sende seo burhwaru ... to Iosue biddende ðæt etc. = miserunt ad Iosue et dixerunt ei.

ASN. (1):—Deut. 11. 25: Ge ... gehirdon his word, ðus evedende = ... et locutus est vobis.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (8):


B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (38).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—
NPM. (3):—Num. 15. 44: Hig swa ȝealh ablende beotlice astigon = At illi contenebrati ascenderunt.—Other examples:
—Ex. 1. 7²: gestrangode = roborati; Num. 16. 33: ofhrorene = operti.

ASM. (3):—Gen. 22. 13: gesæah ðær anne ramm betwux ðam bremelum be ðam hornum gehæft = viditque . . . arietem inter vepres hærentem cornibus (or pred.?).—Other examples:—Ex. 9. 24: hagol wɪð fyr gemenged = mista; Ex. 29. 23: gespréngedne = conspresse.

ASN. (2):—Ex. 12. 8: And eton ealle ðæt fæsc on fyr gebrædl = Et edent carnes nocte illa assas igni:—Ex. 12. 9: gesoden = coctum aqua.

APM. (1):—Levit. 2. 4: Bring clene ofenbacene hlafas mid ele geasmirede = panes conspersos oleo.

APN. (2):—Ex. 31. 18: He sealde Moise twa stænene wexbreda mid godes handa agræfene = duas tabulas lapideas scriptas digito dei; Gen. 41. 6: forscænlæcne = percussae.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):

NSN. (1):—Judges 16. 4: Hine beswac swa ȝealh siððan an wif, Dalila gehaten = Post hæc amavit mulierem, quæ vocabatur Dalila.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):

NPM. (2):—Ex. 12. 19¹²: ne ete ge nan ȝing onhafenes, ne utan eymene ne innan lande geborene = tam de adventis quam de indigenis terrae.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):

NSM. (1):—Judges 13. 2: An man wæs eardigende on Israhela ȝeode, Manne gehaten = Erat autem quidam vir nomine Manue.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—
NPM. (1):—Ex. 4. 31: and hig gebædon hig to gode nywel astrehte on eorðan = et proniadoraverunt.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (22):


NSF. (1):—Gen. 21. 6: ofewundrod.

NSN. (1):—Num. 16. 34: afirht.


DSF. (1):—Judges 16. 1: to anre birig, Gaza gehaten.

DPM. (1):—Judges 16. 7: mid seofon rapum of sinum geworhte.


II. With an Object (0).

No example.

ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES OF SAINTS, I. (89).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (49).

I. Without an Object (25).

NSF. (2):—1. 24: Deos is seo halige ðrynnys, ðe ealle ðing gesceop, on anre godecundnysse æfre wunigende.—So: 3. 130.

NSN. (2):—3. 437: Sum ... his fet ædwoh and gelome hi cyste, liegende æt his fotum; 9. 80: wunigende.

NPM. (11):—6. 113: ... gif we her un swincæ(e), feohende mid geleæfan wið leaðtras.—Other examples:—9. 357: hyldende; liebende: 7. 6, 9. 60; 9. 61: swyltende; truvigende: 9. 88, 9. 350²; wunigende: 3. 132, 3. 527, 6. 66, 9. 133.

NPN. (1):—3. 324: Seah ðe hi [= mælennu] clæne beon on mæg礙ade lybbende.

NP. M. or F. (1):—3. 12: lybbende.

DPM. (1):—7. 151: [mete] heom ælce dæge com edniwe of heofenum xl wintra fyrst on ðam wæstene farende.

ASM. (1):—9. 330: ae ... he asende me ongean on his sige blissigende and on eowre alysednysse.

APM. (1):—9. 103: god hi ða gekæde ... ealle ofer ða ... ðe, siðigende be ðam grunde.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (24).

NSM. (4):—1. 304: se ... læroew lærde us ðus cwæðende.—Other examples:—4. 55: secende; seegegende: 3. 181, 3. 531.

NSF. (3):—8. 176: heo ... fieste, biddende æt gode, ðæt etc.—Other examples:—9. 318: cwæðende; 9. 417: ðæowigende (w. dat.).

NSN. (2):—9. 111: Þæt godes folc ða eode upp be ðam grunde, herigende hoora drihten; 3. 479: singende.


APM. (1):—2. 117: Johannes ... gesceah Crist standan and ðone clænan flocc mid him, hundtecontig ðusenda and
feower and feowertig Susenda, swiðe hlude singende ðone heofonlican sang.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (40).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (40).

NSM. (13):—1. 67: he us alysde ... mid his agenum deaðe, on rode ahangen.—Other examples:—7. 28: awend; gehaten: 5. 9; 8. 2, 78, 127; 9. 193; 8. 268: gehathyrt; 9. 194: ilyfed; 7. 23: ifæstenod; ihaten: 7. 214, 287; 7. 288: ilyfed.

NSF. (3):—9. 207: heo fieste symle buton on freolsdagum, mid hæran gescryd to hire lice æfre.—Other examples:—7. 61: aðwogen; 3. 27: gesceapen.

NSN. (4):—3. 349: Iacobes wif, Rachel geeiged, twentig wintra wunode etc.—Other examples:—3. 334: gehaten; 8. 149: tostencead; 3. 95: ungewemmed.

NPF. (1):—7. 302: Twa hec beo ði isette ... machabeorum ihatene.

DSM. (1):—3. 25: And eac his godecundnyss was on ðære menniscynsse to anum sodan Criste of hyre acenned, æfre unbegunnen on ðære godecundynsse.

DSF. (1):—2. 114: on his gastlican gesiðe, Apocalipsis gehaten.

DSN. (1):—3. 362: mid his wife, Elisabeth genamod.


ASF. (1):—9. 9: towænde se cyning heora ... burh, Hierusalem gehaten.
II. With an Object (0).

No example.

ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES OF SAINTS, II. (22).

A. THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (16).

I. Without an Object (11).

NSM. (2) :—15. 353 : ic hit unwillende do ; 10. 90 : seamiende.

NPF. (1) :—15. 51 : hire fostermoder hi het gan mid oðrum fænnun on feld, sceap to hawienne, and hi swa dydo[n] spinnende.

APM. (2) :—15. 2421&2 : Sume ic slepende beswae and sume eac vacigende = 19. 265 : Et cum dormiunt, venio super eos et excito illos a somno.

II. With an Object (5).

NSM. (4) :—15. 52 : Þa ferde Olibrius to Anthiochiam, axiende etc. ; wespende : 18. 57, 80, 109.

DSM. (1) :—11. 16 : Audiens ex ore meo sermonem meum, adnuntiabis eis ex me, non ex te. Þet is on urum geœode : Of minum muðe gehystendum [for gehystende by attraction to muðe?] ðu bodast hym mine spræce of me, næs of ðe.

B. THE PREDERITE PARTICIPLE (6).

I. Without an Object (5).

NSM. (1) :—15. 12 : wæs sum hæðen cyninge, Theodosius gehaten.
II. With an Object (1).

NSM. (1) :—17. 23 : ic em of GREcane rîce and ic of Iudean wæs, ðan Pontisseen Pilate under-ðeoedd.

Note: Latin Participles.—Latin participles occur in 11. 16 (quoted under dative above), in 13. 13 (sciens = șa wiste se helend), in 13. 59 (sciens = He wiste), and in 18. 68 (et videns filium etc. = no A.-S. equivalent). Again in no. 19, which is entirely in Latin and which is the basis, though not the literal equivalent, of no. 15 (Anglo-Saxon), about 55 appositive participles occur; but, as no one of these is translated by an appositive participle in Old English, it seems unnecessary to cite them.

GOSPELS' (280).

A.—The Present Participle (237).

I. Without an Object (115).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (107) :—

5, 15. 29, 17. 17; Mk. 1. 35: arisende = surgens; L. 5. 3a: astigende = adsoendens; Mk. 7. 34: behealdende = suspiciens; L. 3. 18: bodigende = exhortans; Mk. 1. 7: bugende = pro-cumbens; elypiende = clamans: Mk. 15. 39, L. 23. 46a; ib. = exclamans: Mk. 1. 26b; Mat. 12. 44: cumende = veniens; Mk. 9. 20: femende = spumans; Mat. 4. 9: feallende = cadens; gangende = ambulant: Mat. 14. 25 (or pred.?); Mk. 6. 48 (or pred.?); ib. = transiens, L. 12. 37; L. 15. 5: geblissiende = gaudens; Mk. 1. 31: genealecende = accedens; hrymende = clamans: Mk. 5. 5 (or pred.?), 5. 7; ib. = exclamans; Mk. 9. 26a; L. 8. 28; ingan(c)gende = ingressus: Mk. 1. 21, L. 1. 28; leerende = docens: Mat. 4. 23, 9. 35a, Mk. 12. 35; L. 17. 24: lyhtende = coruscans; L. 5. 3b: sittende = sedens; Mk. 7. 33: spetende = expuens; L. 4. 39: standende = stans; Mk. 15. 30: stigende = ascendens; L. 1. 78: upspringende = oriens; utgangende = egressus: Mk. 1. 45, L. 4. 42.

NSF. (3):—L. 2. 38: And ðæs ðære tide becumende drihtne andyte = Et hæc, ipsa hora superveniens, confite-batur Domino.—Other examples:—L. 2. 19: smacagende = conferens; L. 2. 37: ðæowigende = serviens.

NSN. (4):—Mk. 5. 33a-b: Þæt wif ða ondrædende & forhtigende com & astrehte hi = Multier vero timens et tremens ...
... venit et procidit; gangende = introiens: Mk. 7. 15, 7. 18.

NPM. (30):—Mk. 15. 31: heahsacardes bysmriende be-
twux ðam bocerum cwædon = sacerdotes illudentes ... dicelant.—Other examples:—Mk. 7. 1: cumende = venientes; L. 22. 65: dysigende = blasphemantes; L. 2. 16: efstende = festimandes; Mk. 16. 20: farende = praefecti; gangende = intrantes, Mat. 2. 11; ib. = incidentes, L. 1. 6; gehyrende = audientes: Mat. 13. 13b, Mk. 4. 12b, L. 8. 10a; geseconde = videntes: Mk. 4. 12a, L. 8. 10a; Mk. 11. 24: gyrmende = orantes; Mat. 9. 27: hrymynde = clamantes; Mat. 12. 45: ingangende = intrantes; Mat. 5. 11: leogende = mentientes; lociende = videntes: Mat. 13. 13a, 13. 14; L. 2. 48: sari-
gende = dolentes; Mat. 27. 36: sittende = sedentes; Mat. 17.
3: spreccende = loquentes; Mat. 6. 5: standende = stantes; Mk. 6. 32: stigende = adscendentes; L. 5. 5: swincende = laborantes; utgangende (utgangynde) = exeunte: Mat. 8. 28, 9. 31, Mk. 3. 6, 6. 12; L. 20. 26: wundrigende = mirati; L. 22. 44: yrnende = decurrentis.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 8. 32: big (= da deofla) da utgangende ferdon on da swin = At illi exeunte abierunt in porcos.

NDM. (1):—L. 24. 17: hwet synt da spæca ðe gyt recceæð inc betwynan gangende? = Qui sunt hi sermones quos confertis ad invicem ambulantes?

GPM. (1):—L. 18. 7: Soðlice ne deð God his gecorena wrace eleyiendra to him dages & nihtes = Deus autem non faciet vindictam electorum suorum clamantium ad se die ac noce.

GPN. (1):—L. 8. 32: And ðar wæs micel heord swyna on ˈSam munte lesiendra = Erat . . . grex porcorum . . . pascentium in monte.

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47b: Eft is hœsena rice gelic asendum nette on ða sæ & of ælcum fisce cynne gadrigendum = Iterum simile est regnum celorum sagenæ missæ in mare, et ex omni genere piscium congreganti.

DPM. (5):—L. 6. 17: And mid him farendum he stod on fieldlice stowe = Et descendens cum illis stetit in loco campestri. [Or shall we emend farendum to farende in accordance with the Latin? ] — Other examples:—Mk. 9. 42: gelysfendum = credentibus; Mk. 16. 10a: heosfendum = lugentibus; Mat. 11. 16: sittendum = sedentibus; Mk. 16. 10b: wependum = flentibus.

DPM. (2):—L. 7. 32a & b: Hi sint gelice cildum on strate sittendum & specendum betwux him = Similes sunt pueris sedentibus in foro, et loquentibus ad invicem.

ASM. (4):—Mk. 15. 21: & genyddon sumne wegferendne simonem cireneum cirende of ˈSam tunne . . . Ŝet he etc. = Et angariaverunt praeterreuntem quemiam, Simonem Cyreneum venientem de villa etc.—Other examples:—J. 1. 9:
cumendne = venientem; L. 17. 7*: eregendne = arantem;
Mat. 9. 2: liegende = jaentem.

ASN. (1):—L. 6. 38b: god gemet & full geheapod and oferflowende hig syllas = mensuram, bonam . . . et superref-
fluentem dabunt.

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: yfeahwebbbe = male habentes.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or
is in immediate connection with an appositive participle
(2):—

NSM. (2):—Mk. 11. 17: & he ða lærende ðus cwæð =
Et docebat, dicens eis.—Mat. 26. 27*: And he genam ðone
calic sæncende & sealde hym ðus cwæðende = Et accipiens
calicem, gratias egit, et dedit illis, dicens.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
gerund in the ablative (2):—

NSM. (2):—L. 15. 13: & forspilde ðæ his æhta, lybbende
on his gelsan = et ibi dissipavit substantiam suam vivendo

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 24: wepende cwæð = cum lacrymis
aiebat.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
ablative absolute clause (1):—

NSM. (1):—L. 6. 20: Þa cwæð se hælend besconde to
his learning-cnihtum = Et ipse elevatis oculis in discipulos
suos, dicebat.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin corre-
spondence (2):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 5. 40: He . . . ineode swigende (Hat.
MS.) ðær ðæt meaden wæs = Ipse . . . ingreditur ubi etc.

NSF. (1):—L. 2. 51: And his modor geheold calle ðas
word on hyre heortan smeagende = Et mater ejus conservabat
omnia verba in corde suo. [Cf. L. 2. 19, where smeagende =
conferens.]
II. With an Object (122).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (117):

NSM. (57):—Mk. 1. 41: & his hand æðenode & hine æðrinende [Hat. MS. æþrinede] & ðús cwæð = extendit manum suam, et tangens eum, ait illi.—Mat. 10. 5\a: Þas twelf se h. sende, him bebeodende = Hos duodecim misit J., 

præcipiens eis.—L. 3. 3: he com into eall iordanes rice 

bodiende deæbote fulluht & synna forgynesse = venit in 

omnem regionem Iordanis, prædicans baptismum penitentie 

in remissionem peccatorum (or pred.?). 

Sobodi(g)ende = prædicans in: Mat. 9. 35b, Mk. 1. 14 (or pred.?); = evangelizans in L. 8. 1b (or pred.?).—Mat. 9. 18: & gé-eaðnedde hyne to him, ðús cwæðende = et adorabat eum, dicens. 

So cwæðende (cwæSynde) = dicens in: Mat. 8. 6, 9. 29, 9. 30, 10. 5b, 13. 3, 13. 31, 26. 27b, 26. 44, 27. 11; Mk. 1. 15 (or pred.?), 9. 25; 

L. 23. 46; J. 1. 15, 1. 32.—Other examples:—L. 5. 13 (MS. A): æðenige = extendens; behealdende = circumspiciens, 

Mk. 3. 34; ib. = intuitus, Mk. 10. 21; Mk. 14. 13: berende = bajulans; Mk. 3. 5b: bescæwiende = circumspiciens; Mk. 10. 23: bescænde hine = circumspiciens (without object);— 

biddende = rogans, Mat. 8. 5; ib. = deprecans, Mk. 1. 40; 

blesiende = benedicens, Mk. 14. 22, L. 1. 64; Mk. 5. 5: 

cœorfende = concidens (or pred.?); J. 6. 6: fændigende his = tentans eum; 

Mat. 8. 13: forhtælende = dimittens; Mat. 9. 12: 

gælyrende = audiens; gesænde = videns, Mk. 9. 15b, L. 1. 

12 (no obj. in Latin); L. 14. 7: gynde = intendens; hæbbe 

nde = habens: Mk. 3. 1, 9. 47, L. 4. 33, 7. 8b; Mat. 9. 

35b: hælende = curans; L. 17. 15: mærsiende = magnificans; 

L. 4. 40: onsettende = imponus; L. 8. 1b: predicende 

= prædicans (or pred.); secende = querens: Mat. 12. 43, 

L. 11. 24, 13. 7 (or pred.?);—L. 3. 16: seengende = dicens; 

Mk. 10. 16: settende = imponus; slitetende = discerpens, Mk. 1. 26b, 9. 26b; ib. = seindens, Mk. 14. 63; L. 10. 30: upbe 

sæonde hine = susciplens (no object); L. 18. 43: wuldri 

gende
Morgan Callaway, Jr.

= magnificans; L. 24. 12b: wundrigende ßæs = mirans quod (or pred.?).

NSF. (4):—Mat. 20. 20a,b: Da com to him zebedeis bearna modor mid hyre bearnum big ge-eahmedende & sum ßinge fram him biddende = Tune accessit . . . mater, adorans et petens aliquid ab eo.—Other examples:—J. 11. 28: ewe-
ßende = dicens; Mk. 3. 8: gehyrende = audientes.

NSN. (3):—L. 2. 23: ßæt seic wepened geeynd-lim ontynderde byð driftne halig genemned = Quia omne masculinum adaperiens vulvam, sanctum Domino vocabitur.—
Other examples:—Mk. 7. 19: -clensigende = purgans; L. 7. 29a: gehyrende = audientes.

NPM. (36):—Mk. 1. 5: & wæron . . . gefullode . . ., hyra syna anbetende (MS. A.) = et baptizabantur . . ., considentes peccata sua.—Other examples:—Mk. 6. 55: befaren 
ßende = pereurrendes; Mk. 2. 3: berende = ferentes (or pred.?)
L. 24. 53b: bletsigende = benedicentes (or pred.?)
L. 19. 3: costnigende hine = tentantes eum;
eweßende = dicientes in:
Mat. 6. 31, 8. 25, 9. 27, 10. 7, 10. 12, 12. 10, 12. 38, 27. 23, 27. 29, Mk. 3. 11; J. 11. 31; demende = judicantes: Mat.
19. 28, L. 22. 30 (or both pred.?)
handi(s)ende his = tentantes eum:
Mk. 10. 2, J. 8. 6; L. 24. 52: gebiddende = orantes (no obj. in Latin)
L. 6. 35: gehihtende = sperantes; gehyrende = audientes: L. 4. 28, 8. 15; L. 20. 11: geseßende 
ßofficientes: Mk. 7. 3: healdende = tenentes; herigende (her-
gende) = laudantes: L. 2. 20b (or pred.?)
L. 20. 47: hiveßende = simulantes; secende = quere 
te: Mat.
12. 16, 12. 47, L. 11. 54; ib. = requirentes: L. 2. 45; Mk. 7.
13: toslßende = resceßentes: L. 23. 10: wregende = accusantes (or pred.?)
L. 2. 20b: wuldriende = glorifizantes (or pred.?)
NPF. (3):—Mat. 9. 33: ßa menigeo wundredon eweßende = mirate sunt turbae, dicientes.—Other examples:—Mat. 15.
31a: geseßende = videntes; Mat. 15. 30: habende = habentes.

NPN. (4):—Mat. 8. 31: ßa deoßla soßlice hyne baedon, ßus eweßende = Demonæ autem rogabant eum, dicientes. So 
eßende = dicientia in L. 4. 41b.—Other examples: L. 4.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 221

41*: hrymende = clamantia; Mat. 27. 55: ſenigende him = ministramentes ci.

NP. M. or N. (1):—L. 23. 49: cuðan & wif gesonde = videntes.

NDM. (1):—Mk. 11. 5: Hwæt do gyt ðone foran unigende? = Quid facitis solventes pullum?

DSM. (2):—L. 6. 48: He ys gelic timbriendum men his hu[..] = similes est hominis edificanti domum. Cf. L. 6. 49: He [..] gelic ðam timbriendum men his hu[..] = similes est hominis edificanti domum etc.

DPN. (1):—L. 7. 32*: Hi synt gelice cildum . . . eveδενδυμ = Similes sunt pueris . . . dicentibus.

ASM. (5):—Mat. 8. 17: ðæt ware gefyllæd ðæt gecwedan is [..] = Similes sunt pueris. So eveδενδυμ = dicentem in Mat. 12. 17, 27. 9.—Other examples:

   —Mk. 9. 17: hæbbende = habentem; L. 17. 7b: læsgendne = pascentem.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is generally either subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):—


   NSF. (1):—L. 18. 5: ðæ-læs heo æt neahstan cune me behropende = ne in novissimo veniens sugillete me (or pred.?).

   NPM. (1):—Mk. 9. 15b: & hine gretende him to urnon = et accurrentes salutabant eum.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

   NSM. (1):—Mat. 22. 35: axode hyne & fandode hys ðus eveδενδυμ = Et interrogavit eum unus ex eis legis doctor, tentans eum.

   NSF. (1):—J. 12. 28: ða com stefn of heofone ðus eveδενδυμ = Venit ergo vox de cœlo.
B.—The Preterite Participle (43).

I. Without an Object (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (34):

NSM. (14):—Mk. 14. 51: Sum inuungling him fyligde mid anre seytan behweald nacod & hi namon hine = Adolescens autem quidam sequebatur cum amictus sindone super nudum.—
Mk. 5. 50: he eaweð bewend to sære menign = conversus ad turbam aiebat. So bewend = conversus: L. 7. 9, 10. 23, 14. 25, 23. 28.—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 20: forgnyden = elius; Mk. 5. 4: gebunden = vinctus; Mat. 2. 22: gemynegod = admonitus; gesett = constitutus: Mat. 8. 9, L. 7. 8ª; Mk. 3. 5ª: geturel = contristatus; L. 22. 32: gewend = conversus; Mat. 25. 25: ofdread = timens (or pred.?).

NSF. (1):—Mat. 14. 8: Da eaweð heo fram hyre meder gemyngod = At illa praemonita a matre sua inquit.

NSN. (2):—L. 11. 17: Ǽle rice on hyt sylf todceled by8 toworpen = Omne regnum in se ipsum divisum desolabitur.—L. 10. 15: upolehen = exaltata.

NPM. (5):—L. 1. 74: ǽt we butan ege of ure seonda handa alysede him Æcowian = Ut sine timore, de manni . . . liberati, serviamus illi.—Other examples:—gefullode (gefullode) = baptizati, L. 7. 29ª, 7. 30; L. 9. 31: gesewene = visi; Mat. 7. 6: gewende = conversi.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 26. 47: ǽa com iudas . . . & micel folc mid hym mid swurdum & sahulum asende fram . . . ealdrum = eee Judas . . . venit, et cum eo turba multa cum gladiis et fustibus, missi a principibus etc.

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47ª: Eft is heofena rice gelic asendum nette on ǽa sæ = Iterum simile est regnum ceelorum sagnæ missæ in mare.

ASM. (7):—Mk. 16. 6: ge secað Æene nazarenisecan hælend ahangenne = Jesum queritis Nazarenum, crucifixum.—
Other examples:—Mat. 27. 37: averitenne = scriptam; Mk.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 223

15. 17: awundenne = plectentes; Mk. 15. 15: beswungenne = cessum; L. 23. 16: gebete = emendatum; Mat. 27. 16: gehaelte = vinctum; L. 7. 25: geserydle = indutum.

ASF. (1):—L. 22. 12: he eow betsecS mycele healle gedcefle = ipse ostendet vobis cœnaculum magnum stratum.

ASN. (2):—L. 6. 38: god gemet & full gehapod . . . hig syllæδ = mensuram bonam, et conferunt et coagitatam . . . dabunt; Mat. 27. 34: gemenged = mixtum.

2. An Æ.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):

ASM. (1):—L. 20. 15: hig hine of ðam wingarde awurpon ofslægane = ejectum illum extra vineam occiderunt.

3. An Æ.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):

NSF. (1):—L. 1. 28: hal wes ðu mid gyfe gefylled = Ave, gratia plena (or subst.?).

II. WITH AN OBJECT (7).

1. An Æ.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (7):

NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 31: & ofslægen ðam ðriddan dege he arist = et occisisus tertia die resurget.

DSF. (1):—L. 1. 27: wæs asend gabriel . . . to bewed-dudre sæmnan anum were ðæs noma was iosep = . . . ad virginem desponsatam viro cui nomen erat J.

ASM. (3):—Mat. 11. 8: ðæde hwi eode ge ut geseon mann hnesecum gyrillum geseryldne? = Sed quid existis videre? hominem mollibus vestitum? So geseryldne = indutum: L. 23. 11; Mk. 16. 5: oferworhene = co-opertum.

ASN. (1):—Mat. 11. 7: Hwi eode ge ut on wesen geseon winde awegyd hreod? = Quid existis in desertum videre? arundinem vento agitaten?

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: hi brohton him ealle yfel-hæbbende, missenlicum adlum & on tintegrum gegrîpene =
obtulerunt ei omnes male habentes, variis languoribus et tormentis comprehensos.

Note: Examples of Participles hitherto cited as Appositive.

A. Erdmann (p. 26) considers bebeodende appositive in Matthew 11.1 (hyt væs geworden ða se hælynd ðys ge-endude hys twelf learning-cnihtum bebeodende he for þanun = factum est, quam consummasset Jesus præcipiens duodecim discipulis suis, transit inde), and that ðys is the object of bebeodende; while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March (§ 458) seem to hold that the participle here is used substantively and is the object of ge-endude. To me, however, neither of these views seems tenable; I take ðys to be the object of bebeodende and the participle to be used predicatively after the intransitive verb of ending, as is common in Greek (cf. Goodwin, Gr. Grammar, § 1578) and as occurs in the Greek of this verse.

Again, Erdmann (p. 28) holds that gangende is appositive in Luke 9.34 (hi adredon him gangende on ðæt genip = tim-uerunt, intrantibus illis in nubem); but, as I have since tried to show (Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 13), the participle is more probably a crude absolute dative.

According to Erdmann (p. 28) ahsienne is possibly appositive in Mark 9.32 (hi adredon him ahsienne = timebant interrogare eum), while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March (§ 458) appear to look upon ahsienne as the substantival object of adredon. For several reasons, however, I believe that ahsienne is to be emended to ahsienne, which latter is the infinitive object of adredon. (1) We know that this confusion of infinitive and participial forms occurs in the Gospels (cf. above Mk. 1.5, where I give MS. A.’s andetende instead of the Corpus anddetenne). (2) We find the verb ondredan governing an inflected infinitive as direct object (cf. Mat. 1.20, 2.22, both cited by Erdmann). (3) ahsienne would correspond better with the infinitive of the Latin (and Greek) than would ahsienne.
In Luke 9. 55, Professor Bright, following MSS. B. and C., reads: *hine bewend, he hig sreade (= conversus increpavit illos), in which case bewend would be appositive. But, as we have no other instance in the Gospels of the past participle (bewend) governing an accusative, it seems better to read, with the remaining MSS., *bewende (bewente).* The Lindisfarne and Rushworth Glosses likewise have a finite verb here. For the other occurrences of bewend in the Gospels, see NSM. under B, i., 1 above.

WULFSTAN (28).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—244. 7*: sæt is feðer and sunu and halig gast and is an soð god rixigende and gemende ealra his gesceafta a butan ende.

NPM. (1):—295. 14: hi sculan fleonde on gefeohte beon ofslagen.

NPN. (1):—236. 26: and ða deoflu wendon sceamigende aweg.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (6).

NSM. (5):—199. 15: be ðam awrat Iohannes . . . ðus cweðende. Ib. 201. 8, 246. 11, both immediately before a Latin quotation. [Only one other example of *cweðende* occurs in Wulfstan (see 105. 30 under NPM.). Wulfstan translates *dicens (diecutes)* twice by a co-ordinated finite verb (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), while twice he leaves it untranslated (31. 32, 77. 3).]—244. 7b: sæt is feðer and sunu and halig gast and is an soð

*The past participle must however certainly be allowed to govern the accusative. I should still regard *hine bewend* as a servile translation of *conversus,* and the readings of Corp. and A. as representing steps in revision.—J. W. B.*
god rixigende and gemende celra his gesceafa a butan ende.—
278. 9: and on ðam cahtoðan deage manna gehwylc ham ferde mid fulre blisse gode ælmihtigum sancjende sære mærde (or predicative?).

NPM. (1):—105. 30: we hine ænne ofer ealle ægre ðing lufjað and wurdiað mid gewissum geleafan ewðende etc.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (19).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (2):—25. 19: se ðe sæne bryne ðurhþeðð wibesecceded (or pred.?) ; 26. 7: gemencged (or pred.?).

NPM. (7):—133. 5a likeness of the text is unclear. 131. 23: and animam uestram tabescentem faciam, et persequuntur uos inimici ustri, et fugietis nullo persequente.—137. 18: and we beod him sæne sieringa beforan brohthe æghwanon eumene to his ansyne.—Other examples:—gehadode (gehadede): 160. 1, 181. 29, 272. 21, 292. 30.

ASF. (5):—263. 4, 5, 6a & b: Seah ðe ða mihtegestan and ða ricestan hatan him reste gewyrean of marmanstane and mid goldfretum and mid gimeynnum eal astwined and mid seolقrum ruwum and godwebbe eall oferwigen and mid deorwyrdum wyrtgemengnessum eal gestreded and mid goldleafum gestrewed ymbutan ; 163. 6: gewylede.

AP. M. or F. (1):—46. 7: wa cow, he ewæð, ðe leegað togedere hamas and æhta on unriht begyntene on æghwilce healf.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—48. 3: and forðam he seal drefan dimme and doopne hellewites grund, helpes bedeled.

NPM. (3):—256. 12a, b, c: ac gewitað fram me, wuldre badeled, freondum afreede, freondum betachte in ðam hatan wylme hellefyres.
Note: Latin Participles in Wulfstan.—Thirty-four Latin participles occur in Wulfstan. Of these, twelve are untranslated (adorantes, 175. 14; audientes (twice), 42. 29, 47. 12; dicens (twice), 31. 32, 77. 3; egressus, 87. 10; elevatus, 31. 19; placentem, 31. 28; reatus, 63. 12; respondens, 87. 12; scribentes, 43. 9; sumentes, 30. 12); twelve are translated by a subordinated finite verb (accedens, 29. 11; agnoscentis, 29. 15; audiens, 190. 11; dicentis, 87. 18; fallens, 50. 19; habentes, 43. 15b; ponentes (twice), 42. 25, 26; sciens, 248. 9; sperantes (twice), 43. 15, 48, 6; tabescentes, 131. 30); and nine are translated by a co-ordinated finite verb (dans, 29. 21; dicens (twice), 60. 14, 87. 15; faciens, 248. 10; respondens (respondentes) (thrice), 62. 3, 67. 23, 87. 16; reverentes (twice), 44. 5, 49. 17).

BENET¹ (142).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (103).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (40).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (35):—

NSM. (12):—95. 10: niwan curnende (text: cumenne) ænig to gecyrrrednesse ne si him eðelc forgifen infsereld = Noviter veniens quis ad conversionem non ei facilis tributatur ingressus. So curnende = veniens: 80. 6, 95. 13.—Other examples:—4. 8: forsecunde = respondens; 36. 2b: gangende = ambulans; 116. 15: gebetende = satisfaciens; 114. 14: gertruwigende = conjidens; 69. 5: ingangende = ingrediens; 68. 1: lufianende = diligens; 36. 2b: sittende = sedens; 36. 2c: standende = stans; 57. 3b: Surhuwigende = persistens.

NSF. (1):—2. 11: utan gehyran ... clipiente hwet us myngie stefn = audiamus ... clamans quid nos ammoneat vox.

NSN. (1):—9. 16: sæt forme mynstermannæ sæt is mynsterlic campiende under regule ᄃৎde abbude = Primum
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

cœnobitarum hoc est monasteriale militans sub regula vel abbate.

NPM. (13):—55. 7: arisende sôdlice to godes weorce . . .
gemedlice tihtan oððe laran = Surgentes vero ad opus dei
invicem se moderate cohortent. So arisende (arisende) = surgentes: 55. 4, 81. 16.—Other examples:—24. 12:
dro(h)igende = degentes; 106. 11: forahædigende = pre-
venientes; 24. 11b: gangende = ambulantes; gecryrende = revertentes: 92. 14, 93. 2; 24. 10: libbende = viventes; 6.
12: Surhwenigende = perseverantes; utgangende = excuentes:
75. 5b, 81. 12, 93. 1.

NP. M. or F. (1):—45. 7: gebyriende = pertinentes.

Note.—utgangendum (in 66. 15: ða utgangendum = egre-
dientes) is either absolute or substantive; in the latter case
read ða utgangendan.

GSM. (1):—25. 10: se þe heortan his besceawað ecriendes
= qui cor ejus respicit murmurantis.

GPM. (2):—69. 1: meosan etenda gebroðrum (read ge-
broðra) næline wana beon na seell = Mensis fratrum edentium
lectio dcesse non debet; 78. 12: utgangendre = excentim.

DSM. (1):—13. 9: sæt ahwenne him na seege syngeendum
= nequando illi dicat deus peccanti.

DPM. (1):—118. 10: us asolcenum ʒ yfel lybbendum ʒ
gimeleasum scame gescyndhysse = nobis autem . . . male
viventibus . . . rubor confusionis est.

APM. (2):—21. 7: geðohtar ða yfelan heortan his to
becumende (text becumenne) sona to christe ashidan = Cogita-
tiones malas cordi suo advenientes mox ad christum allidere.
So cumende = advenientes: 33. 5.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin
adjective (2):—

NSM. (1):—61. 6: hordere si gecoren of gegæderunge wis
. . . na upahafen [blank] dreʃ Rede Cellarius . . . eligatur
de congregatione sapiens . . . non elatus non turbulentus.

NPM. (1):—11. 2: ða . . . cumliðiað æfre worigende ʒ
æfre stadolfeste = qui . . . hospitantur semper vagi et
nunquam stabiles.
3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (3):

NSM. (3):—61. 11: forseonde hine he ne gedrefe = non spernendo eum contristet. [Cf. Benedict\(^1\) 54. 14: he ðeah mid forseawennesse hine ne genwrothise.]—114. 10\(^{a,b}\): his unaemnenlicnesse se ðe gewis [blank] ð gedafenlice [blank] na modigende [text: modigenne] oððe wiðstanende [blank] = impossibilitatis sue causas ei qui sibi preest patienter et oportune sugerat, non superbiendo aut resistendo vel contradicendo. [Cf. Benedict\(^1\) 128. 15, 16: ðæt he eft mid gedœyle on gedœfenre tide his mægenleaste his ealdre gecyððe, he no ðeah na wiðstande, ne mid modignesse ne wiðewðe.]

Note 1.—It is possible to construe forseonde, modigenende, and wiðstanende above as appositive participles, but it is also possible that they may be used here precisely as the Latin gerunds are; that is, they may be verbal nouns in an oblique case instead of verbal adjectives in the nominative case. Certainly yrnende in the following is a verbal noun:

Benet\(^1\) 3. 15: ... ne ðæs rîces hearle on inne gyf we wyllað [blank], buton [blank] mid godum dæum yrnende natesh swo... (In) eijus regni tabernaculo si volumus habitare, nisi illue bonis actibus currendo minime pervenitur. [Cf. Benedict\(^1\) 3. 9: Natoðæshwon his rîces eardung bið gefaren buton mid gyneme and geheald-wumnesse godra dæda; ofst and hradung godra weorc is to ðæm rice weges færeld.]
In all probability, too, onginnende and standende, corresponding respectively to a Latin gerundive and gerund, are verbal nouns, not verbal adjectives, in the following:—Benet\(^1\) 105. 5\(^{a,b}\): æfter endeybyrdnesse ða ða he gesette oððe ða ða habbað ða sylfan gebroðran hi ne genealæcan [blank] to huselgange to on * sealmum ginnende on choro standende = Ergo secundum ordines quos constituerit vel quos habuerint ipsi fratres si [read sic] accedant ad pacem, ad communionem, ad psalmum imponeendum, in choro standum. [Cf.

*As Logeman (foot-note to p. 105) says, on belongs with ginnende.
Benedict\textsuperscript{1} 115. 4, 5: \ldots gauge æle æfter oðrūm to cosse, to husle and be ðan on chere \textit{stande} and sealmas and gehwylce \textit{Senunga beginne}.\[
\]
Note 2.—In the following the present participle that corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative seems in use to be a pure adverb:—Benet\textsuperscript{1} 43. 4: ðæt is ðæt sig [blank] sungen buton antempne \textit{teonde} æðhwega swa swa on ðæm suunan die dæge = id est, ut sexagesimus sextus psalmus dicatur sine antiphona \textit{subtrahendo} modice sicut dominica. [Cf. Benedict\textsuperscript{1} 37. 8: ðæt is ðæt se syxandseyxtigeða sealm \ldots sy geewedon butan antefene, and he sy on swege \textit{geleneded} hwæðhwaræ ealswa on suunnædæge.]—Benet\textsuperscript{1} 76. 3: ðane forði eallunga \textit{teonde} latlice we wyllæ on ðæm gesæd = quem propter hoc omnino \textit{protrahendo} et morose volumus dici. [Cf. Benedict\textsuperscript{1} 68. 9: ðonne we eac forði on ðæm sange \textit{tenegað}.]\[
\]
\section*{II. With an Object (63).}

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (62):—

NSM. (32):—68. 1: sig hus cyte ofer hi betæht \textit{ðæn adrædende} [blank] \textit{ðæn} lufiænde = sit cella super se deputata, et servitor \textit{timens} deum et diligens. [Here and occasionally at other places \textit{deum} is not glossed, perhaps because of its familiarity.]—34. 6: gelyfe \ldots \textit{geeadmetende} hine sylfne = credat \ldots \textit{humilians} se.—Other examples:—29. 11: \textit{asmaidand} (MS.: \textit{asmaidan}) = \textit{scrutans} (or predicative?) \ldots 16. 8: \textit{behivienende} = \textit{dissimulans}; 13. 8: ofrūm \textit{bodiende} = \textit{alius predican}; 104. 16: \textit{bruecende} (MS.: \textit{brucene}) anwealde = \textit{utens} potestate; 111. 8: \textit{donde} = \textit{fucien}; 61. 7: \textit{dredende} (MS. \textit{dredenne}) = \textit{timens}; 31. 16: \textit{gefeonde} = \textit{immittans}; 5. 3: \textit{gyfylende} = \textit{complexus}; 29. 3: \textit{gehealdende} = \textit{custodiens}; \textit{gehyrende} = \textit{audientia}; 3. 1, 17. 14; 35. 2: \textit{habbende} = \textit{habens}; 98. 11: \textit{healdende} = \textit{reservans}; 31. 10: \textit{lufiende} = \textit{amans}; 14. 14: \textit{maengende} tidum tida = \textit{miscens temporibus tempora}; 109. 5: \textit{nime} = \textit{sumens}; 2. 16: \textit{secende}
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 231

queer ens; 28. 14: secende [sie!] = ponens; seegende = dicens; 36. 5, 78. 10; 16. 9: talicende (MS.: talicende) = pendens; 4. 7: tihtende (MS.: tihtende) = suadentem; 109. 2\*: ðencende = cogitans; 36. 4: wenende = existimans; wìtende = sciens: 15. 12, 19. 3, 57. 4\*, 97. 5, 103. 14; 1. 8: wìðeþênde ùнстum = abrenuntians voluptibus.

NSF. (1): —98. 6: ðæt fers call seo gêderung ðriddan siðan togeðoedende [text: -eane] mid [blank] = Quem versum omnis congregatio tertio respondet adjungentes gloria patri. [The A.-S. has nothing corresponding to the Latin respondat. Of course, the A.-S. participle may be plural, as the Latin one is.]

NSN. (3):—27. 2: clypað us gewrītt ðæt godecunda cala seceende (= seegende) = Clamat nobis scriptura divina fraterna diecus. So seegende = dicens: 30. 14.—32. 7: gesutulende = ostendens.

NPM. (19):—5. 16: ð gif fleonde helle wite life we wyllas becuman to ðam ecan = Et si fugientes gehenne penas ad vitam volumus pervenire perpetuam.—Other examples:—4. 11: ahwenende (= ah wenende?) = existimantes; 12. 14: forhiægende = contemnentes; forhiætende = relinquentes; 23. 16, 24. 1; ib. = deserentes: 23. 17; 32. 12: geçyllende = adimplentes; 24. 11\*: gehysæme (w. dat.) = obedientes; healdende = servantes: 10. 9\*; ib. = observantes: 117. 16; 51. 10: myiidigende = commomentes; nimende = accipientes: 92. 7; ib. = assumentes: 109. 16; 3. 16: seegende = dicentes; ðæwæende (ðæwæende) (w. dat.) = servantes: 11. 3, 67. 13; 109. 15\*: wenende = estimantes; wìtende = scientes: 107. 12, 116. 4.

GSM. (3):—31. 11: ðæs stefne drihtnes mid dæcum ac he gegefelæce seegeandes = sed vocem illam domini factis imitetur diecensis. So seegeandes = diecensis, 57. 4\*. Cf. 109. 2\* (ðencende gescæd ðæs halgan iæcobes seegeandes = cogitans discretionem sancti iacob diecensis.)

GPM. (1):—111. 5: swa hwænne swa geceost [blank] mid geðæalhte [blank] ondraedendra gode etc. = quemcumque elegerit abba cum consilio fratrum timentium deum.
DSF. (1):—3. 8: est [sic] luitempre [blank] (siss)ere stefne [blank] gelaðgendum læra ge ða leofestan gebrøðran = Quid duleius nobis (ab hac) ac voce domini invitantis.

ASM. (1):—107. 7: set [blank] for his leahtrum . . . geðafiejendæ (text: -enne) had mid gelieum geðæhta gif geecyð = Quod si etiam omnis congregatio vitius suis . . . consentiunt personam pari consilio elegerit.

APN. (1):—26. 14: higlista [blank] ðe he idel word [blank] stirienda . . . we . . . fordemæð = Scurilitates vero vel verba otiosa et risum moventia . . . dampnamus.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):

NSM. (1):—31. 5: ariende = parcendo.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (39).

I. Without an Object (30).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (30):

NSM. (15):—59. 6: þeyah þe he amansumad hit ne gebet teartere genealæce dræniægan = etiam si excommunicatus non emendaverit aceror ci accedat correpito.—Other examples:—

100. 3: bepecht (MS. bepechs) = deceptus; 68. 1*: fulfremed = sollicitus; 77. 13: geasindrod = sequestratus; 97. 17: gebeden = rogatus; 107. 14: gehadod = ordinatus; 78. 14: gehaten = jussus; 104. 6: geminegod = ammonitus; 54. 7b: geþreat = correptus; 2. 5: geþysod = irritatus; 78. 11: pro offered = stratus; 12. 11: tolysed = absolutus; 98. 17: wiseryd = exatus; upahafen = elatus; 59. 9, 61. 5.

NSF. (1):—36. 12: sona to ðære soðan lufan godes becymsæ to ðære fullfremed ut seo asend ege = mox ad karitatem dei perveniet illam que perfecta foras mittit timorem.

NSN. (1):—70. 17: an pund awegen genihtsumige on dege = Panis libera una propensa sufficiat in die.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 233

NPM. (10):—10. 7: ḃa on āenigum regole na affundode vel [sic] oððe afundennessa laerowas . . . leogan gode . . . synd ācawene = qui nulla regula approbati experientia magistri . . . mentiri deo . . . noscuntur.—Other examples:—113. 9: astreht (MS.: astrehθ) = prostrati; 44. 11: gecyrde = conversi; 10. 1ª: gehorde = docti; 32. 14: genyddhe = angarizati; 76. 10: gesawene = visi; 75. 5ª: gesetce = positi; 10. 1ª: getyde = instrueti; 10. 9ª: nxode = mollili; 109. 15ª: tobreædde = inflati.

ASM. (2):—118. 12: Æysne Æane læstan acunndesnes regol aewritene fylstendum etiste Æu gefrenume = hanc minimum inchoationis regulam discriptam adjuvante christo pericias; 20. 10: gedonne = factam.

APF. (1):—92. 15: [b]rec Æas Æa [blank] beoð asende on hreangelhuse niman Æa hi gecyrrende geSWAGENU Æa agenbringan = Femuralia hi qui in via diriguntur de vestario accipiant qui revertentes lote ibi restuant. [Is the -u of geSWAGENU due to lote, and is geSWAGENU to be considered a neuter despite the gender of [b]rec ?]

Note.—In the following, gewunede and gedihte appear to be used as adverbs:—92. 16: cuflan Ï tonican beon oðerhwilen synð gewunede sunt [sic] habban æthwigan beteran = Cuculle et tunice sint aliquanto solito quas habent modice meliores; 40. 11: sittendum callum gedihte Ï be endebyrdnyse on sceamolum = residentibus eunctis disposite et per ordinem in subselliiis.

II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):—

NSM. (1):—54. 7ª: Ææt ænig of Æam on sumere fíerunga tobroæd modignesse gif bið gemet teallíc etc. = Quod si quisque ex eis aliqua forte inflatus superbia repertus fuerit reprehensibilis etc.
GSF. (1):—16. 7: Æt he na Æt an nyðerunga æfwyrðe heorde him sylfan befiestre ãolige = ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi commissi non patiatur.

GPF. (1):—16. 9: hele saule him sylfan bifestra = salutem animarum sibi commissarum.

DSN. (1):—57. 3\*: ana [blank] to weorce [blank] to be-tæhtum = Solus sit ad opus sibi injunctum.

DPM. (1):—31. 1: \* gif fram englum [blank] betæhtum = et si ab angelis nobis deputatis.

DPN. (1):—75. 4: on ðam sylfum betæhtum him sylfum ðingum = in assignato sibi commissio.

ASM. (1):—104. 4: se [blank] regol fram deanum olde fram pravostum him sylfan gesetne gehealden wite = qui tamen regulam a deanis vel prepositis sibi constitutam servare sciat.

ASF. (2):—104. 15: se ne abbod gedrefe befieste him sylfum heorde = Qui abbas non conturbet gregem sibi commissam; 62. 15: him betæhte = sibi commissum.

II.—IN THE POEMS.

A.—LONGER POEMS.

BEOWULF (91).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (23).

I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (19).

NSM. (9):—2272: se ðe byrnende biorgas secceð; ib. 2569 (or pred.?); 815: wæs gehwaðer oðrum lifginge lað.—
Other examples:—2219: slaepende; 2235: ðænchyegende; 2548: unbyrnende; 708: vevecende; 2062: wigende (or lifginge?); 2716: wishyegende.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 235

NSF. (1):—1953: ðær hio siððan wel ... lifgesceafte lifigende breac.

NPM. (2):—916: Hwilum flítende fealwe stræte mearum mæton; 2850: hy seamiende scyldas bæran.

N. Dual M. (1):—535: Wit ðæt gecwadon cnihtwesende.

DSM. (2):—1389: ðæt bið drihtguman unligfendum æfter selest; 1187: gif he ðæt eal gemon, hwæt wit to willan and to worðmyndum umbor-wesendum ær arna gefremedon (or subst. here?).

ASM. (3):—2781: ligegeasan wæg hatne for horde, hioroweallende; 372: ðæ e hine cuðe cnihtwesende; 46: ðæ hine æt frumscæfte forð onsendon ðenne ofer yðæ umbrella wesende.

APM. (1):—1581: slepende fræt folces Denigea fyftyne men.

II. With Object (4).

NSM. (3):—2106: gomela Scilding fela frięgende feorræn rehte (but Kühler considers fela an adverb); 2350: for ðon he ær fela nearo neðende nīða gedigde; 1227: Beo ðu sūna minum dædum gedefa dream healdende. [Should we not write dream-healdende, as Grein does in his Glossary? Cf. dream-hoebendaru in Genesis 81. Köhler considers healdende as substantivized.]

NPM. (1):—1829: Gif ic ðæt gefriege ofer floda begang, ðæt ðæc ymbesittend egesan ūywæð, swa ðæc hætende hwilum dydon, ic ðæc hæsenda ðegna bringe, helecða to helpe (or a substantivized participle, as Köhler holds).

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (68).

I. Without an Object (18).

NSM. (9):—1351: ðær earmsceapen on wæres wæstmum wreclastas træd (may be considered substantivized as by Köhler); 2569: Gewat ða byrnende gebogen seriðan (or pred.?); 846: hu he ... on nicera mere fēge and geflymed
feorhlæstas bær; *ib.* 1370; 2852: *He gevergad sæt*; 868: gumna *gilphæden* or attrib.?); 262: *Wæs min fæder folecum gecyðed, ædle ordfrauma Eegþeow haten* (may be pred.); 1913: Cool up geðræng, *lyftgeswenect on lande stod*; 2443: sèolde hæwdræ swa ðæah ædling unweæt encæs linnan.

NSF. (2):—614: *even Hroðgares . . . grette goldhroden guman on healle; ib.* 1948.

NSN. (1):—3012: *ac ðær is maðma hord, gold unrime grimme geceapod* (may be pred.).

NS. M. or N. (1):—3085: *Hord is gesceawod, grimme gegeongen.*

NPM. (1):—1819: *we sæliðend seegan wyllað, feorran cunnec, ðæt etc.*

NPN. (2):—59: *Dæm feower bærn forð veirmid in woruld wocun.—Other examples:*—3049: *þurhetone (or pred.?).

DSM. (1):—1479: *þæt ðu me a wære forðgewitenum on fæder stæle (cf. *Abs.* Pte. in A.-S., p. 16).*

APF. (1):—1937: *ac him vælende weotode tealde, handgeveðene.*

II. **WITH AN OBJECT** (50).

NSF. (5):—1443: scolde herebyrne hondum *gebroden*, sid and searofah sund cunnian.—Other examples:—3018: golde *bereafod*; 1333: fylle *gef(r)ægnod*; 777: golde *geregnad*; 624: mode *geðungen*.

NSN. (5):—553: beadohraegl...on breostum læg, golde *gegyrded*.—Other examples:—2680: niđe *genyded*; 2764: searwum *geseld*; 2441: fyrenum *geseyngad*; 406: *seowe* smiđes ordancum.

NS. M. or N. (1): 3146: astah...swogende leg wope *bewunden*.

NPM. (3):—1126: Gewiton him ða *wigen* wica neosian freondum *befeallen* Frysland geseon; 480: Fül oft gebeotedon beore *drunene* ofer ealowæge oretmeegas.—Other examples:—3014: feore *gebohte*.

ASM. (1):—3139: Him ða *gegiredan* Geata leode ad on eordan unwaclīne, helnum *behongen*.

ASF. (2):—2931: bryd aheorde, gomeła iomeowlan golde *berofene*.—Other examples:—2192: golde *gegyrede*.

ASN. (2):—1900: He ðæm batweardle *bunden* golde swurd gesalde; 1531: wærp ða wundenmæl wretum *gebunden* yrre oretta (though some consider *gebunden* as nom.).

AS. M. or N. (1):—2769: Sylce he siomian geseah segn eallgylden... *gelocen leodhæftum*.

APM. (1):—1028: ne gefraegn ic freondlicor feower mad-mas golde *gegyrede* gummannæ fæla in ealobence oðrum gesellan.

APN. (2):—2762: Geseah...fyrmnanâ fatu feormend-leæse hyrstum behrorene; 871: soðe *gebunden*.

Note 1.—Köhler reads *ealo drincende* in 1945, and considers drincende an appositive participle; I retain Wülker’s *ealodrinecende*, which is a substantive.

Note 2.—The text is too defective to admit of classifying the following: 304: *gebroden*; 1031: *bewunden*; 2229: *earmsceapen*; 2230: *sceapen*; 3151: wunden.
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

GENESIS (42).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (10).

I. Without Object (10).

NSM. (3):—1583: ac he hlihende broðrum sægde.—Other examples:—874: sceomiene; 347: sorgiende.

NSF. (1):—890: gilsiende.

NSN. (1):—560: willende.

NPM. (1):—2066: hlihende.

GPF. (1):—81: ðrymmas weoxon dugða mid drihtne dreamhæbbendra.

DSM. (2):—2663: þæt ic þe lissa lifigendum giet on dagum læte dugða brucan, sinces gesundne; 2649: Me sægde ær þæt wif hire wordum selfa unfrigendum, þæt etc.

ASM. (1):—2169: ac ic þe lifigende her wið weana gehwam wreo þ eyldie.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (32).

I. Without Object (11).

NSM. (4):—1571: Swiðe on slæpe sefa nearwode, þæt he ne mihte on gainsynd drepen hine handum self mid hrægle wrynon.—Other examples:—725: gehugod; 481: gewanod; 1799: haten (may be pred., as Seyfarth holds).

GPM. (1):—1836: seorren cæmera.

GPN. (1):—1185: wintra gebidena etc.

ASM. (1):—1865: greðreadun.

ASF. (2):—165: ætrowde; 549: gesceapene (or pred.?).

ASN. (1):—2022: forslige (or attrib.?).

APN. (1):—1520: besmilen.

II. With Object (21).

NSM. (9):—930: dungeðum bedeled; 2099: eorlum bedroren; 2124: seegum bejilted; 2605: wine drumeen;
1818: drihtne geccoren; 2668: egesan geSread; 2137: elne gewurðod; 32: niøes ofSyrsted; 2740: hleoWfeðrum ðealht (or pred.?).

NPM. (5):—86: leohte belorene; 76: ðystrum beðwealde; 1734: metode geccoren; 1693: hleoðrum gedcelde; 2002: eegum ofSegde.

NPF. (2):—2082: dome bedrorene; 2010: freondum be-sleorge.

NPN. (2):—2001: see gum ofsløgene; 1989: helnum ðealhte.

ASN. (2):—1263: huntuelftig geteled rime wintra; 2344: geteled rimes.

APN. (1):—1336: ðu seofone genim on ðet sundreed tudra gehwîces geteled rimes.

Note.—Seyfarth considers the following as appositive participles:—183: unwindod, 319: fyldc, 1472: liðend, 2480: ðearjende. But, in The Abs. Pte. in A.-S. (p. 17), I have shown that unwindod is used predicatively, and that fyldc is a finite verb. The form of liðend seems to me to show that it is a substantive. I consider that ðearjende is used substantively, as does Dietrich (quoted by Wülker).—In 2603, gencarwood, the text is too defective to admit of classification.

**EXODUS (12).**

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (3).

NSF. (1):—213: Wececcende bad eccl seo sabgediriht somod setgedere maran maegenes.

NPM. (2):—452: flugon forhtigende (or pred.?) 264: lifigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

I. Without Object (3).

NPN. (1):—497: synfullra sweet sawlum lunnan fieste befarene.
ASM. (1):—412: _unweaxenne_.
ASN. (1):—232: x. hund _geteled tireadigra_.

II. With Object (6).

NSM. (3):—532²: wreeceum _alyfed_; 532¹: wommum _aevyrgeol_; 549: mihtum _swiðed_.
NSF. (1):—580: golde _geweorfd_.
NPM. (1):—36: _swesfon seledreamas since berofene_.
ASN. (1):—372: _geteled rime_.

**DANIEL** (13).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (5).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (2):—687: _hamsittende_ (or attrib.?); 573: _lifgende_.
NPM. (1):—296²: _lifgende_.

II. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—355: ðær ða _dædhwatan geond ðone ofen eodon ð se engel mid, ðeorr _norigende_; 396: ðæc . . . _gastas lósæð lifrean, lean sellende callum . . . [defective MS.] eæ drilten_.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (8).

I. Without Object (1).

ASM. (1):—521: _gesceledne_.

II. With Object (7).

NSM. (3):—736: _drihtne georecn_; 184²: _mode gefrenod_; 184¹: _mane gevenged_.
NSN. (1):—556: _treow . . . telgum besnacled_.
NPM. (3):—296¹: _lige beleyde_; 92: _metode georene_; 259: _aldre generede_.

---

240 MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 241

Note.—Spaeth considers 696 (Sæton him æt wine wealle belocene) as appositive, but the participle is rather predicative after sæton.

CYNEWULF'S CHRIST (65).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (14).

I. Without Object (13).

NSM. (3):—176: Hwæt bemurnest ḍu, cleopast cearegende?—Other examples:—426: forðongende; 1324: unseomende.

NSF. (4):—1160: Hell eac ongeat scealdwrecceende sæt etc.; 1016: sorgende; 1584: seriende; 288: Sristhycende.

NPM. (4):—950: brecende; 387: bremende; 90: geomrende; 992: wancende.


ASM. (1):—1391: ḍa ic ðe on ḍa fegran foldan gesette to neotenne neorxnawonges beorhtne blædwelan, bleom seinende.

II. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—1271: on ḍam hi awo seulon wree wæmende wærgu dreogan. [Grein1 and Gollance1&2 write as a compound, wæcmewinnende.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (51).

I. Without Object (15).

NSM. (2):—475: aewæð Waldend engla, gefyzed, Frea mihtig, to Fæder rice; 970: Grornað gesargad eal middangeard (but Hertel considers it predicative after an intransitive verb).

NSF. (3):—1065: arered; 1087: biscon (or pred.?) 380: geblissad.

NSN. (2):—218: acenned; 961: gesargad.
NPM. (3):—1229: arasode; 1298¹: ascamode; 1274: fordone.

NPM. (2):—1223: Donne beoð gesomnad ðaclænan folc . . . geceorne bi eystum; 1071: Donne weoroda mest fore Waldende, ece and edgeong, ondweard geð, neode ond nyde bi noman geætne (may be masc., as Cook gives it).

GPM. (1):—179: Ne ic culpan in ðe, incean ænigne æfre onsumde, womna geworhtra.

ASN. (1):—890: mon mæg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde gefyse, cearum ewidene cwiera gewyrhtu, forhtæ afere.

APN. (1):—892: afarde (quoted under ASN. 889 above).

II. WITH OBJECT (36).

NSM. (6):—625: ond to ðere ilcan scealt eft geweordan wurnum avcallen.—Other examples:—725: clæðum be-wunden (or pred. ?); 1407: bidælæd dugeðum ond dreamum; 1432: mane ——; 1206: deáðirenum fordæ; 10:5 mon-num sended.

NSF. (4):—192: Donne sceal Danides dohtor sweltan, stanum astynædad.—Other examples:—1085: blode bestonom (or pred. ?); 908: gebleod wundrum; 292: beaga hroden.

NS. N. or M. (1):—1139: ðæs temples segl, wundor-bloom geworht to white ðæs huses, sylf slat on tu.

THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 243

GSM. (1):—20: Eadga us siges odrum foreyrned, wlitigan wilsdenes, gif his weore ne deag.

DPM. (1):—151: bring us haelof wergum wit demeanum, woes foreymenum.

ASF. (1):—120: Nu we hyhtfulle hælo gelyfað surh sæt Word Godes weorodum bringen.

APM. (1):—873: slaæpe gebundne.

Note.—In 891 (mon maeg sorgende folk gehyran, hygegeomor, hearde gefyzed, earum ewiȝendæ ewera gewyrhtu), Hertel considers ewiȝendæ appositive, but to me it seems to be used predicatively as a second accusative.

ELENE (26).

I. Without Object (7).

NSM. (3):—352: swa hit eft be eow Essaias . . . wordum mælde, deophyeggeðe surh dryhtnes gast; ib. 881; 951: wiðerhyegendæ.

NSF. (1):—449: Ne maeg . . . Ebreæ sæo ðæðecæhtende rice healdan.

NPF. (1):—906: sawla ne moton manfremmende in minum leng æhtum wunigan.

DSM. (1):—810: Sie ðæ, maegena god, ðrymsittendum sæn butan ende.

ASM. (1):—795: Forlæt nu . . . wynsumne up under radores ryne rec astigan lyflicende.

II. With Object (2).

GPM. (1):—1096: ðæ se halga . . . eode gumena ðreatæ god heargendra.

DPM. (1):—1220: ðæ callum bebead on sæm gumrice god heargendum, werum and wifum, sæt etc. (Schürmann: substantivized).
B. THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSN. (1):—1226: nærost beama, ðara ðe of eordan up aweoxe geloden under leafum.

GPM. (1):—992: Ñæs ða friegendra under goldhoman gad in burgum forran geferede [Sievers as quoted by Wülker: gefereda?].

ASM. (1):—529: mec ðæder min . . . uneaxenne wordum lærde.

II. WITH OBJECT (14).

NSM. (6):—697: cleopigan ongan sarum besyled.—Other examples:—932: sarum forsoht; 1128: egesan geaclod; 720: hungre gehyned; 1263: wirum gewlenced; 1094: brestum unburyred.

NSF. (1):—331: on ðrymme bad . . . geatolic guðewen golde gehyrsted.

NSN. (2):—2: Ða wæs agangen geara hwyrfum tu hund þ þæro geteled rimes; 634: geteled rime.

NPM. (2):—766: dregoðað deðewale in dracan feðme ðeostrum forðylmed; 263: hyrstum geferede.

NPN. (1):—883: leomu colodon dreanedum beðcaht.

GPN. (1):—1284: Sceall æghwylc . . . worda swa same wed gesyllan, callra unsnyttrœ ær gespreecna.

ASM. (1):—1058: ðæt he gesette . . . Iudas ðam folce to bisceope . . . cælftum gecæcna.

Note.—Schürmann (p. 368) considers the following appositive, but I substantive:—279: mecælhegende; 395: synwyriskænde. On the other hand, as the statistics show, I have classified as appositive participles several words that he considers as substantives.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 245

JULIANA (28).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).

I. Without Object (10).

NSM. (5):—68: Ða reordode rices hyrde wið ðære
fænman læder frecne mode daraðæbbende; 281: lyft-
læcende; 137: ðe ðu hæstlice manfremmende to me beotast
(or subst.?) ; 445: sceal nu lange ofer ðis seyldwyrcende
scume ðrowian; 261 : siðende.

NSF. (1):—252: gleawhyegende.

NSN. (1):—648: ic leof weorud læran wille afrem-
mende, etc.

NPM. (1):—662: wæccende.

DSF. (1):—196: wiðærhegyegende.

ASM. (1):—435: ðrymsittendne (cf. Phoenix 623).

II. With Object (1).

GPM. (1):—6: geat on græswong god hergendra hæsæn
hildfruma haligra blod ryhtfremmendra. [Gollancz has
god-hergendrar, in which case we have a substantive.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

I. Without Object (7).

NSM. (5):—411: acyrred; 320: aſongen; 417: bifolen;
262: gesungen; 262: sended (or pred., as Conradi holds?).

GPN. (1):—686: wiðædra.

ASM. (1):—617: awyrgeðænec.

II. With Object (10).

NSM. (4):—350: faene bifjongen; 203: niða gebeded; ib.
462; 582: yrre gebolgen.
NSF. (2):—241: heolstre *bihelmad*; 535: breostum *inbryrded*.
NPM. (4):—681: hroðra *bideled* hyhta lease helle solton.—Other examples:—486: boere *druene*; 13: dædum *gedwolene*; 490: sarum *gesohte*.

**GUTHLAC (42).**

A.—*THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).*

I. **Without Object (10).**

NSM. (1):—1085: lac onsægde *drophyegende* dryhtne to willan.
NPM. (7):—203: sceoldon wræcemegas ofgiefan *gnornende* grene beorgas; *ib.* 651; 117: Sonan sið tугon, wide waðe wuldre beseyrede *lyfliaccade*.—Other examples:—401: *mar-wende*; 828: *secudende*; 879: *wedende*; 635: *wiðerhyegende*.
NPF. (1):—1250: wyrta...*huigflowende*.
GSM. (1):—1190: *neosendes*.

II. **With Object (1).**

NSM. (1):—1029: ac he hate let torn *soliende* tearas geotan. [Furkert considers *soliende* predicative after *let*, but incorrectly I think. Cf. Judith 272.]

B.—*THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (31).*

I. **Without Object (8).**

NSM. (5):—911: *Hreðer* innan born *afysed* on fordissið.—Other examples:—1286: *arcred*; 662: *gegearwad*; 1287: *geseven*; 913: *ungeblyged*.
NSN. (1):—1282: lic colode *belifd* under lyfte.
NPF. (1):—1249: wyrt *gebowene*.
NPN. (1):—1263: seadu sweðredon *tolysed* under lyfte.
II. With Object (23).

NSM. (8):—1127: awrecen wælpilum; 1260:... wælstre-lum; 967: flæsce bifongen; 1143: leana biloren; 1004:... foldernæ biðæacht; 640:... geblonden; 1126:... genegead; 1274:... husle gæræcordc.

NSF. (1):—1325:—sonne seso ðrag cymeð wafen wyrd-stafum (or pred.?).

NSN. (1):—888:... him to honda hungre geðreatad fleag fugla cyn.

NPM. (7):—116: wuldre byseقود; 873:... bidro-vene; 872:... hiwes binitene; 1047: wilna bicirede; 645:... wuldre bicyrede; 858:... adle gebundne; 1046:... aec in lige secolon sorgwylnum soden sar wanian.

NPN. (2):—930: leomu hefegedon sarum gesohter; ib. 1003.

ASM. (3):—1312:... life bliedenne; 992:... is me... geðuht, ðæt ðe untrymnes adle gongum on ðisse nyhstan niht bysgade, sarbennum gesoht; 1118: feorhord onleac searocegum gesoht.

APM. (1):—740: leosphate gesohter.

RIDDLAS (44).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (8).

I. Without Object (8).

NSM. (4):—13. 14: lifgende; ib. 29. 9; 3. 8: winnende; 107:... wrotende.

NSN. (1):—49. 4:... sine for seegum swiægende cwæð. 

NS. F. or N. (1):—84. 5:... wiht... færende.

NPM. (1):—17. 6:... hi boð swidran... sonne ic j mec slittende sona flymað.

GSF. (1):—55. 5:... stondendre.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (36).

I. Without Object (9).


NSF. (2):—21. 2: *gegyrwed;* 21. 1: *sceapen.*

NS. F. or N. (1):—24. 2: *ic eom wretic wilht on gewin sceapen.*

NSN. (1):—31. 2: *bewunden.*

NPM. (1):—12. 6: *gemedde.*

II. With Object (27).


NSF. (5):—27. 6: *sindrum begrunden;* 71. 1: *reade bewæfed* (or pred.?); 32. 20: *frætæd hyrstum;* 4. 22: *eare geblenden;* 32. 10: *gecoren craeftum.*

NSN. (2):—31. 3: *fyre gebysgad* (or pred.?); 31. 2: *wedre gesomnad* (or pred.?).

NPM. (4):—14. 8: *meahtum aweahte;* 12. 6: *mode bestolene;* 14. 7: *rearæ birofene;* 12. 7: *daeæ gedwolene.*

NPN. (1):—27. 14: *wretic weorc smiSa wire bifongen.*

ASF. (1):—87. 2: *wombe drySum gedrungne.*

ASN. (2):—24. 8: *spilde gebolden;* 30. 3: *listum jegierwed.*

Note 1.—Two Latin appositive participles occur in the Riddles, but are not translated into Anglo-Saxon:—90. 4 1/2: *Dum starem et mirarem, vidi gloriam magnam: duo lupi stantes et tertium tribul[antes] III pedes habeabant, cum septem oculis videbant.*
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 249

Note 2.—The defective text precludes the classification of the following: — 78. 7: beowigene; 83. 3 and 4: life bewunden, fyre gefaelad; 84. 40: wuldrum geweltegad.

ANDREAS (33).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (7).

I. Without Object (4).

NSM. (3):—1557: hean, hygegeomor, heofende sprære; 378: ænig ne wende, sæt he lifyende land begete; 59: He ña wepende weregum tearam his sigedryhten sargan reorde, grette.

GSM. (1):—528: ñu cyninges eart þegen ... ðrymsillendes.

II. With Object (3).

NSM. (2):—570: Æfelinge weox word þ wisdom, ah he þara wundra æ dom agende dæl ænigne freetre ðode beforan cyðde; 300: Him ña ofstlice Andreas wið wine hearfende wordum melde (cf. Guthlac 1321, where winehearfende is substantive).

DPF. (1):—491: Ic wæs on gifeðe in þ nu syxtynæ sidæm on sæbate, mere hrerendum mundum freorig, eagorstreamas.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (26).

I. Without Object (12).

NSM. (6):—78: ðy hes ic lungre seyle ablended in burgum ... leng ðrowian.—Other examples:—1299: averged; 267: bewunden; 1127: gehæfted; 4362: geþreatod; 4361: geþyd.

NSN. (1):—1529: sund grunde onfeng deope gedrefed.

NPM. (1):—665: næs ñær folces ma ... sinra leoda nemne ellefne orettmaegas, geteled tireadige.

GPM. (1):—24: hie blod and fel, ðira ðæschoman feorran cumenra þegon.
ASM. (1):—1651: Ðær se ar godes anne gesette wisfæstne wer, . . . ý gehalgode . . ., Platan nenned.
ASF. (1):—646: ic on ðe sylfum sóð onenawe wisdomes gewit wundorcræfte, sigespved gesead (or fact.?).
APM. (1):—883: swylche we gesegon for suna metudes . . . eowic standan, twelfe getealde, tireadige hæleð.

II. With Object (14).

NSM. (5):—309: Þæt ðu sebeorgas secan woldes, mernes-streama gemet, máðum bealted.—Other examples:—1314: duguðum bereafod; 413: billum foregrunden; 983: elne gefyrrðed; 1313: myrce geseyrðed.
NSN. (1):—772: mordre bewunden.
NPM. (4):—1631: witum aspedde; 1618: wuldre beseyrðed; 1003: dreore druncne; 746: mode gemyrde.
DSM. (1):—487: Þæt ðu me getæhte . . . hu ðu wægflotan ware bestendon, sehengeste sund wisige.
ASF. (1):—675: he lungre ahof wode . . . wean onblonden.
ASN. (1):—1035: gelsedde . . . on frið dryhtnes tu ý hundteontig geteald rime (cf. Andr. 665 and Elene 2, 634).
APN. (1):—1046: weorod on wilsið wolenum beæhte.
Note.—The ms. is too defective to classify 1025: gewyrht.

PHŒNIX (26).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (4).

NSM. (1):—368: forðon he drusende deað ne bisorgað.
NSF. (1):—502: Sonne ðeos woruld seyldwyreende in some byrneð.
GPM. (1):—178: ealra beama on eorðwege uplaedendra.
DSM. (1):—623: ond ðe ðone sy Srymsittendum. Cf. Summons to Prayer 2: Srymsyninge thronum sedens; and ib. 25: to ðæodne thronum regenti.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (22).

I. Without Object (7).

NSM. (3):—525: oferød; 180: gescylded; 160: geðungen.
NPM. (1):—592: gebredade.
NPF. (2):—226: geðungne; 541: gecorene.
ASN. (1):—274: gefratwed.

II. With Object (15).

NSF. (1):—503: ade oneled.
NSN. (1):—62: lyfte gebysged.
NPM. (1):—633: manes amerede.
ASF. (2):—170¹²: biholene þ bihyldde monegum.
APM. (1):—488: sawlum binumene.

METRES OF BOETHIUS (13).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (6).

I. Without Object (6).

NSM. (1):—2. 2: Hwæt ic lioða fela lustlice geo sang on selum! nu secel siofigende wope gewæged wreccea gionmor singan sarceidas = Boeth.² 3. 2: Carmina qui quondam studio florente peregi, flebilis in maestos coger inire modos.
NSF. (3):—20. 221: ðonne hio ymb hi selfe secende smeaS; ïb. 20. 214; 20. 212: hwærfed ymbe hy selfe oft smeagende ymb etc.
NSN. (1):—3. 4: ðonne hit winnende his agen leohæt anforlætæS.
NPF. (1):—11. 34: Swa hæfð gehæderod hefonrices weard mid his anwealde ealle gesceaftra, sæt hiora ærhwile wið oðer winð, þ þeah winnende wresbað fæste = Boeth.²
48. 3: Quod pugnantia semina foedus perpetuum tenent.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (7).

I. Without Object (4).

NSM. (1):—1. 82: forþolt.
NSF. (1):—6. 15: geondstyred.
NPM. (1):—25. 7: ymbestandne = Boeth.² 95. 2: septos.
APM. (1):—19. 4: alceded (perhaps should be alceded, as Grein conjectures).

II. With Object (3).

NSM. (1):—2. 3: wope gewaged (see Latin under 2. 2 above).
NSN. (1):—3. 8: sorgum geswenced.
NPM. (1):—25. 6: golde gegerede.

THE METRICAL PSALMS¹ (37).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

I. Without Object (13).

NSM. (2):—50. 75 (Cot.): ðonne ic . . . ofer snawe self seinende ðiure sibbe lufan sona gemete = et super nivem dealbabor; 77. 65¹: sleepeende = dormiens.
NPM. (5):—50. 56 (Cot.): cerrende = o; 125. 5¹ & 2: gangende þ ferende georne wepað = evantes ibant et lebant; 146. 10: se ðe mete syleð manegum natum, hreñes bridduum, ðonne heo hropende him cigeað to = Qui dat jumentis escaum ipsorum, et pullis corvorum invocantibus eum; 113. 25: lifigende = qui vivimus.
DSN. (1):—82. 6: mid cardiendum folce in Tyrum = cum habitantibus Tyrum.

DPM. (1):—140. 6: mid mannum manfremendum = cum hominibus operantibus inquietatem.

ASN. (2):—140. 4: sete swæse geheald swylce, drihten, muðe minum (ne læt man spreçan) þæþæle dor ymb-standende, sæt on welerum wisdom healde = Pone, Domine, custodiam ori meo; et ostium circumstantia labiis meis; 57. 6: yrnende = curræns.

APM. (2):—68. 25: grammiegende = o; 123. 2: lijfende = vivos.

II. With Object (4).

NSM. (2):—104. 10: and him ða mid soðe sægde, evecënde = Et statuit . . . diecens; 105. 4: Genumne us, drihten, on modsefan forð hyegende folces ðînes þ us mid healo her geneosa = Memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui; visita nos in salutari tuo.

NPM. (1):—138. 17: Blodhreowe weras! ge hebugað me, de sæt on gedohtum ðencead evecënde = Viri sanguinum declinate a me; quia dicitis in cogitationibus vestris.

GSM. (1):—105. 17: Hi . . . ongunnan . . . onwendan heora wuldor on ðæne wyrsan had hædenstyrces hig etendes = et mutaverunt gloriæ suam in similitudinem comedentis foenum.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (20).

I. Without Object (9).

NSM. (3):—115. 6: ðihte ðeowæn sunu on ðe æcenne = filius ancillæ tuæ; 148. 9: alæced = o; 50. 74: geclansod = mundabor.

NSF. (2):—50. 127 (Cot.): hiorte geclansod = cor contributum; 143. 10: Ic . . . singe on psalterio, ðe him swynsað oft mid tyn strengum gelogen hearpe = cantabo tibi; in psalterio decem chordarum psallam tibi.
II. With Object (11).

NSM. (2):—77. 65²: wine *druncen* = *crapulatus* a vino; 54. 24: healuinwites facene *gefylled* = *dolosi*.

NSF. (1):—50. 128 (Cot.): hiorte . . . *geeadmeded* inge-ðancum = cor . . . *humiliatum*.

NPF. (1):—50. 51 (Cot.): ic . . . bidde sæt me *forgefene* gastes wunde an forðgesceafet feran mote. [There is no Latin correspondence to this part of 50. 51, the verse being much amplified in the O. E. translation. Grein in Glossary sub v. *forgifan* says that *forgefene* is accusative absolute, and supplies ic as subject of mote. I translate as Dietrich (quoted by Grein): 'ut mihi condonata animi vulnera in abolitionem abire possint.]

NPN. (3):—106. 36: syðsan greowan lungre land heora aloden wæstum = Et seminaverunt agros, et plantaverunt vineas, et fecerunt fructum nativitatis; 148. 10: fugla cynn fiderum *geseyrped* = voluces pennatae (may also be singular); 67. 17: værun cræta tyn ðusendo *geteled* rime = currus Dei decem millibus multiplex.

DSN. (1):—67. 26: on *sīnum* temple tidum *gehaldgod*, sæt ys on Hierusalem = a templo *sancto* tuo quod est in H. (or NSM.?).

ASF. (2):—59. 8: weallum *beworhte* = *munitam*; 131. 5: stowe drihtne *gecorene* = locum Domino.

APN. (1):—106. 32: He on westeme wynne streamas sóðfest sette, ðær he sarig folc *geðewde* ðurste ða blissade = Quia posuit flumina in desertum, et exitus aquarum in sitim.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO—SAXON. 255

B.—MINOR POEMS.*

AZARIAS (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NPM. (1):—16\textsuperscript{2}: lifigende.

B.—THE PAST PERFECT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—16\textsuperscript{1}: lege bilegde.

CALENDAR OF SAINTS (4).

A.—THE PAST PERFECT PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (2):—7: forby se kalend us cyme\textsuperscript{\#} ge\textsuperscript{\#}inged on sam y
daege; 164: \textsuperscript{\#}ætte Haligmond heledum ge\textsuperscript{\#}inged fere\textsuperscript{\#} to folce.

II. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—142: wastnum hl\textsuperscript{\#}aden; 205: forste gefe-
tera\textsuperscript{\#} (may be acc.).

CHARMS (4).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—r. 74: Ful æcer fodres firæ cinne beorht-

*The text of the Ruin is so defective that I have taken no account of this poem.
B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (2).

ASN. (1):—i. 61: heo si geborgen wið calra bealwa gehwyle, ðara lyblaca geond land sawen.
APN. (1):—i. 64: ðet awendan ne mage word ðus gecwedene.

II. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—viii. 30: Iohannes wuldre gewlitedgod.

CHRIST'S DESCENT INTO HELL, RESURRECTION, ASCENSION, AND APPEARANCE AT FINAL JUDGMENT (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).

APM. (1):—81: gebeged.

II. With Object (3).

NSM. (1):—172: dome gewurðad.
NSN. (2):—284: wynnum bewunden; 283: gimmum gefræteæod.

CREED (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

ASM. (1):—10: cyning, hider asendne.

DOOMSDAY (5).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (2).

NSM. (1):—25¹: murenigende cwæð.
NPM. (1):—231: deriende gedwæð.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 257

II. With Object (1).

NPN. (1):—112: cumað hider ufon of heofone deán beacnigende tacen = signa minantia mortem of Latin original.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NSM. (2):—290: blostmum behangen; 25²: mode gedrefed.

DREAM OF THE ROOD (Vercelli Text) (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—24: Hwæðre ic sær liegende lange hwile beheold hrowcearig hsælendes treow.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. Without Object (1).

DSN. (1):—49: Eall ic wæs mid blode bestemed, begoten of sær guman sidan.

II. With Object (1).

ASN. (1):—5: leohte bewunden.

DURHAM (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPN. (1):—19: Eardiað . . . in sær minstre unarimeda reliquia, monia wundrum gewurðad.
EADGAR (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NSM. (1):—28 B: hama bereafod.
NSN. (1):—11 A: agangen wæs tynhund wintra geteled rimes.

EADWEARD (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—9: wel gedungen.

II. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—16: launde bereafod.

FALLEN ANGELS (DIE KLAGEN DER GEFALLENEN ENGEL) (12).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (12).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (1):—181: aworpen.
NPM. (1):—308: gefræbewod.
ASF. (1):—341: Godes andsacan hwearfan geond helle, hate onæled ufan and utan.

II. With Object (9).

NSM. (5):—186: goda bedæđed; 122: duguðum bedeled; 121: wuldre beneved; 38: gebunden fyrcelmum; 131: synnum forwundod.
NPM. (3):—344: dreamum bedalde; 52: susle begro-rene; 343: wuldres beseyrede.
NPF. (1):—296: sorgum bedalde.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 259

FATES OF MEN (3).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).
I. Without Object (1).
DSM. (1):—9: god ana wat, hwæt him veaxendum winter bringed.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).
I. With Object (2).
NSM. (2):—55: dreamum biseyred; 20: mode gebysgad.

GLORIA (2).
A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).
I. Without Object (2).
NSM. (2):—10: asyndrod; 12: gebletsod.

GNOMIC VERSES (1).
A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).
I. Without Object (1).
NSM. (1):—11. 35: to ðæs oft eymede dead unwinged.

HARROWING OF HELL (HÖLLENFAHRT CHRISTI) (2).
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (2).
I. Without Object (2).
NSM. (1):—24: hlykhende sprec.
NPM. (1):—91: mændon murnende.
HUSBAND'S MESSAGE (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. Without Object (1).
NSF. (1):—13: ȝet ȝu sinchroden sylf gemunde.

II. With Object (1).
NSM. (1):—39: nyde gebaeded (ms. is defective).

HYMN (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).
NSM. (1):—43: haliges gastes fegere gefelled.

INSCRIPTION ON CROSS AT BRUSSELS (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).
NSF. (1):—2¹: bær byfigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).
NSF. (1):—2²: blode bestemed.

JUDITH (9).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).
NPM. (1):—272: Hi șa somod ealle ongunnon cohhetan, cirman hlude ȝ gristbitian gode orfeorme, mid toșon torn
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 261

boligende. [Cf. Guthlac 1029: torn bolioende; and Psalm 1112: torn toðum bolian = dentibus fremere.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (8).

I. With Object (8).

NSM. (2):—67: wine swa druncen; 118: ðystrum forsidled.

NSF. (2):—171: golde gefratewod; 129: ðeawum ge-fnungen.

ASF. (2):—36: beagum gehlaste; 37: hringum gehrodene.

ASN. (1):—329: golde gefratewod.

APF. (1):—339: gerenode golde.

Note.—A. Müller considers ðearffendre in 85 (ie ðe . . . biddan wylle milte ðinre me ðearffendre) and geweorsod in 299 (Him on taste for sweet Ebrea sigore geweorsod) appositive; they may be, but to me the former seems attributive and the latter predicative.

MALDON (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NPM. (1):—57: ðæt ge mid urum sceattum to scype gangon unbefohtene (or pred.?).

RUNESONG (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. With Object (2).

NS. F. or M. (1):—31: flor forste geworught.

NSN. (1):—37: wyrtrumum underweðyd.
A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (3).

NSM. (1):—105: Sonne he hangiende helle wisçæ.
NPN. (1):—220: aterreynu, ... ða ðe nu weallende ðurf attres oroð ingang ryman.
ASF. (1):—447: lisigende.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (2).

NSF. (1):—31: gegoten.
NSN. (1):—222: gescæned.

II. With Object (1).

ASM. (1):—104: heolstre behelmed.

SEAFARER (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without an Object (1).

NSM. (1):—106: cymeð him se ðead unðinged.

II. With an Object (3).

NSM. (3):—16²: winemægum bidsoren; 17: bhongan hrimgicelum; 16¹: wynnum bidsoren.

SOUL AND BODY (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—46 (Vere.): ic wæs gast on ðe fram gode sended (or pred.?).
II. With Object (3).

NSM. (2):—34 (Verc.): flæ sce befangen; 67 (Verc.): synnum gesargod.
NSN. (1):—105 (Verc.): dæulum gedrefed.

SPIRIT OF MEN (4).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NPM. (1):—82: we sculon a hyegende hælo rædes gemun-nan in mode mæla gehwylem ðone sælestan sigora waldend.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

I. With Object (3).

NSM. (3):—42: Srymme gebyrmed; 41: wine gewaged; 43: æfestum onaled.

SUMMONS TO PRAYER.

Note.—No example occurs in the Anglo-Saxon part of this poem, but two occur in the Latin, both with an object:—
2: ðæonne gemiltsæþ ðæ ... Srymcyningc thronum sedens; 25: to ðecodne thronum regenti. With both compare Phoenix 623: Srymsittendum.

WALDERE (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSF. (1):—B 19: Standeð me her on eaxelum Æltheres laf god and geapueb, golde geweorðod (or pred.?).
WANDERER (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—20: eðle bidæled.

WHALE (5).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NP, M. or N. (1):—32: bið . . . deofla wise, sæt hi droht-ende ðurh dyrne meaht duguðe beswicað.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—70: gereaht (but the passage is doubtful).

II. With Object (3).

NSM. (1):—45: heoloðhelme biðeæht.

NSN. (1):—10: sondbeorgum ymbeæld.

NPM. (1):—74: gyltum gehrodene.

WIDSID (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—39: ac Offa geslog ðerest monna cniht wesende cynerica mæst (cf. Beow. 46, 372, 535, 1187; Bede 142. 8, 188. 1).
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 265

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. With Object (1).

NSM. (1):—53: godes and yfles ðær ic cunnade enosle bidæled.

WONDERS OF CREATION (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. Without Object (1).

NSM. (1):—80: witan . . . of ðæ hwa ðæs leohæs lond-buende brucan mote.

II. With Object (2).

NPM. (2):—14, 15: eðon ryht sprecan, ðæt a friegende fira cynnes ð seegende searoruna gespon a gemynude mæst monna wiston.

Note.—Bewritten of line 19 should be bewitan or bewriðan, as several editors conjecture.
## SYNOPSIS TABLE OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLES IN ANGLO-SAXON.

### I.—IN THE PROSE WORKS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Work</th>
<th>Present Particle</th>
<th>Preterite Particle</th>
<th>Total of Pres. and of Pret. Pics.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>N.</td>
<td>G.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bede</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>93</td>
<td>73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>17</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>58</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>63</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>36</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>477</td>
<td>203</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>356</td>
<td>129</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>17</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>61</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>49</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>67</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>71</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>91</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>105</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>105</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in the Prose Works...</td>
<td>1636</td>
<td>807</td>
<td>707</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## II—In the Poems.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Week</th>
<th>Present Participle</th>
<th>Without Object</th>
<th>With Object</th>
<th>Total</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Booswif</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excetb</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edem.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Excal</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edelweid</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edelweid's</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Juliana</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Juliana's</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heliwulf</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heliwulf's</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andre</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meta</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meta's</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minor Poems</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in Poetry</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Totals in Tree</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Minor Totals</th>
<th>X, G, B. D. A.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>267</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER II.

USES OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE
IN ANGLO-SAXON.

The uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon may be grouped under the three following larger heads:

I. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adjectival (Relative) Clause, and denotes either an action or a state, as in:—Mk. 3. 1: "bar was an man forseruncene hand habbende = erat ibi homo habens manum aridam; Bede 246. 7: sende ... haligne wer ã in his ðeawum gemetfaetne ã in leornunge ... wel gelaerðne = 194. 28: misit ... aurum sanctum, ... scripturarum lectione sufficienter instructum; Beow. 624: ðæt hio Beowulfæ, beaghroden even, mode geðungen medoful æther; Aelf. L. S. 28. 58: On ðam ylcan dage com sum bisceop, helenus gehatu.

II. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adverbial (Conjunctive) Clause, and denotes time, manner, means, etc., as in:—Bede 8. 23b: ða brynas ... gebiddende adwæsete = 37. 5: incendia orando restinxerit; ib. 10. 10: ðæt se ylea bisceop geveorden onheald = 48. 1: Ût idem episcopus factus mandarit; Beow. 480: Ful oft gebeotedon beore drunene ofer ealowiege oretmeegas.

III. The Appositive Participle is substantially equivalent to an Independent Clause, and either (1) denotes an accompanying circumstance or (2) repeats the idea of the principal verb. Doubtless, as Gildersleeve holds (Latin Grammar, § 664, Remark 1), an ultimate analysis would show every participle to be dependent in nature; but the dependence here is so slight that it may be ignored. Certainly the function of the participles under this head is so radically
different from that of those under I. and II. as to demand separate consideration. Nor does the fact that in modern English we not infrequently retain the participle in our translation of (2) (cf. Mat. 13. 3) invalidate this classification. To define the class negatively: all appositive participles that are not equal to either a dependent adjectival or a dependent adverbial clause are considered as equal to an independent clause. This use of the participle is commonly recognized by Greek and Latin grammarians. Thus, in the remark just cited, Gildersleeve admits this use of the participle, although he objects to its being classed as co-ordinate: “It is sometimes convenient to translate a Participle Sentence by a co-ordinate clause, but the Participle itself is never co-ordinate, and such clauses are never equivalents.” Goodwin also recognizes this use; in § 832–§ 844 of his Moods and Tenses he designates the relations expressed by his “Circumstantial Participle” as follows: (1) time, (2) means, (3) manner, (4) cause, (5) purpose, (6) condition, (7) concession, (8) “any attendant circumstance, the participle being merely descriptive;” (9) “that in which the action consists.” His (8) and (9) cover exactly the ground of my “participle substantially equivalent to an independent clause;” and it seems to me that to give this use the name Co-ordinate is in the interest of simplicity. This modification made, Goodwin’s “Circumstantial Participle” would tally perfectly with my “Participle equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause.” Fay (l. c.) and Milroy (p. 16) explicitly state that the participle is occasionally equivalent to a co-ordinated finite verb. If I dwell on this co-ordinate use of the participle, it is because it has received but scant treatment in our standard English and German grammars (see March, § 459 (4), Mätzner, III, p. 70 (c), and von Jagemann, § 124, c), and is not mentioned in any of the dissertations on Anglo-Saxon or Germanic syntax that have come under my notice. Examples are as follows:—(1):—
Lk. 4. 39: he standende ofer hig ðam fefore bebead = stans super illam imperavit febru; ib. 10. 23: ða cwæð he to his
learningenhtum *bewend* = Et *conversus* ad discipulos suos dixit;—*Aelf. L. S.* 146. 458: behyddon his ... lichaman ... *secgende*; *Mat.* 8. 25: hy awhelton hyne *Sus cweSende* = suspicaverunt cum dicentes;—(2):—*Mat.* 11. 25: Se hælynd ewæp andswariende = *respondens* Jesus dixit; ib. 13. 3: hy spreec to hym fela on bigspellum, *cweSende* = Et locutus est eis multa in parabolis, *dicens*; *Aelf. L. S.* 80. 523: spære mid ... reorde god *herigende*.

The relative frequency of these three uses of the appositive participle—the adjectival, the adverbial, and the co-ordinate—may be gathered from these figures: of the adjectival there are about 1223 instances in all, 881 in the prose and 342 in the poetry; of the adverbial, about 897 instances, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry; of the co-ordinate, about 890 instances, 871 in the prose and 19 in the poetry. In all about 3010 examples of the appositive participle have been collected, of which 1784 are present and 1226 are preterite.

So much by way of general statement; let us now consider the three classes in detail.

I. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADJECTIVAL (RELATIVE) CLAUSE.

As we have seen, the adjectival is the commonest use of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, about 1223 examples occurring in all. Of this number 881 occur in the prose, and 342 in the poetry, in each distributed throughout all periods.

The adjectival use is found with both the present and the preterite participles, but is far more frequent with the latter than with the former. About 377 examples occur of the present participle, and about 846 of the preterite. Examples of each participle are given below.

The present participle, in this use, has the power of governing a direct object, but it occurs far more frequently
without an object than with one, especially in Early West Saxon and in the poetry, in the latter of which an object is almost unknown. In all we have 270 present participles without an object and 107 with an object. [See the discussion of the Governing Power of the Participle, in Chapter III.]

The past participle, too, can have an object (see Explanatory Note to Statistics), and in the poetry usually does; in prose the reverse is the case. Of the preterite participles used adjectivally, 609 have no object, of which 525 are found in the prose and 84 in the poetry; while 237 do have an object, of which 39 are from the prose and 198 from the poetry.

As stated in my Introduction, not a few scholars deny the adjectival use to the appositive participle, and class all participles that are equivalent to a relative clause as attributive. I have, however, already explained why I do not accept this view, and have shown that the meaning of the term appositive participle has been extended to include participles equal to relative clauses. Still other scholars admit that the participle equivalent to a relative clause may be used appositively, but only, they maintain, when the participle denotes an act (in the largest sense); that which denotes a state or condition being called attributive. It appears to me that, in so doing, these grammarians are confounding two distinct things, viz., the classification of the participle by its nature and the classification by its syntactical relationship,—a confusion that should be avoided. But I have not ignored the object at which these scholars aim, namely, sharply to discriminate between the participle that has strong verbal (assertive) power and the participle that has strong adjectival (descriptive) power; on the contrary, by arranging the whole of my statistics with reference to whether or not the participle is followed by an object, and by emphasizing the co-ordinate use of the participle, I have tried to segregate the more verbal from the less verbal participles to a degree not
attempted hitherto in Anglo-Saxon. To apply this principle to the matter in hand, the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival (relative) clause: the transitive participle with an object is manifestly nearer a verb than the participle without an object. Again, the preterite participle is more like an adjective than is the corresponding present participle. This will sufficiently explain the chief differences between my statistics and those of former investigators as to the adjectival use of the appositive participle.

The adjectival use occurs in most of the texts, prose and poetical, and I give a few examples here from the chief writers in prose and in poetry.

I. In Prose.

Ælfrēd:—Bede 8. 2: Prēt P... wæs siended to gely-fendum Scottum on Crist = 28. 15: Ut... P. ad Scottos in Christum credentes missus est.—Ib. 78. 15: ðæt wið in blodes flownesse gesetel... meahte gehrīnan = 55. 25: Si ergo in fluxu... posīta... potuit tangere.—Boeth. 46. 27: Hwæt is heora nu to lafe, butan se lyfta hlīsa ðæ se nāma mid feaum stafum awrīten? = 47. 17: Signat superstes fana tennīs pauculīs Inane nomen litterīs.—Greg. 1 155. 10: Sōnne he ongiet be sumum ðingum ðīde ðēawum utanne atiexdum cāll ðæt hie innan ðenead = 112+: qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius apparentibus ita corda... penetrat etc.

Ps. Th.—20. 3: ðu sendest his heavōd kynggold, mid deorwyrðum gimmum astened = posuisti in capite ejus coronam de lapide pretioso.

Chron.:—755 F.: Sibertes broðer, Cynehard gehaten, ofsloh Cynewulf on Merantune.

Laws:—Ælfrēd, e. 9, Title: Be bearneacenum wiðe ofleaga-num [MS. B.: Be ðām ðæt man ofslea wið mid cilde].

Bened.1:—25. 16: and nu ðām englum us betachtum ure weorc... beocð gebudence = 50. 13: et ab angelis nobis deputatis... opera nostra nutiantur.
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

_Bl. Hom._ 11. 7: Arweorðian we Crist on binne setene.

Ælfric:—_L. S._ 54. 83: gewendon to . . . byrig, Antiochia geciged (sic!).—_Ib._ 78. 494<sup>1</sup>²: Effrem wæs gehaten sum swiðe halig abbod on wæstene wunigende, fela wundra wyrcende.

Gosp.:—_Mat._ 8. 9: Soðlice ic eom man under anwealde gesett = Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate constitutus.—_Ib._ 8. 17: ðæt wære gefylled ðæt geewithen is ðurh ðæsiam ðone witegan, ðæs exeðende (sic!).—_Ib._ 11. 16: heo ys gelic sittendum cnapun on foreige = Similis est pueris sedentibus in foro.

Wulfst.:—46. 7: wa eow, . . . ðe leegað togaedere hamas and selita on unriht begytene on æghwile bealfe.—181. 29: ealle gemænelice, gehadode and læwede, bugon to gode georne.

II. In Poetry.

_Beow._:—777: ðær fram sylle abeåg medubenc monig mine gefræge, golde geregnad.—_Ib._ 1645: þa com in gan ealdor ðegna, dædeene mon dome gewâðad.

_El._:—331: ðær on ðrymme bad . . . geatolic guðewen golde gehyrsted (or pred.?).—_Ib._ 352: Swa hit eft be eow Essaias witga for weorodum wordum maeld, deophyeggendë ðurh dryhtnes gast.

_Gen._:—725: hloh ða ð plegode boda bitre gehugod.—_Ib._ 1836: hwæt sie freonðlufu ellðeodigra uncer twega, feorren cœwerna.

II. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADVERBIAL (CONJUNCTIVE) CLAUSE.

Of the adverbial use of the appositive participle I have found about 897 examples, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 538 times in this use, and the past participle 359 times.
Of the present participles 430 have no object and 108 have; of the preterite participles 261 have no object, while 98 have.

In its adverbial use the appositive participle denotes subordinate relations of manner and means (combined here under the head of Modal), of time, of cause, of purpose, of concession, and of condition. Of course, these uses so interlap that at times the same participle can with propriety be put under several different heads. Where classification is so largely a matter of subjectivity, there must be much room for difference of opinion. I trust, however, that in the main my classification will justify itself to my readers. According to my estimate, the approximate number of each use is: Modal, 319; Temporal, 248; Causal, 228; Final, 40; Concessive, 33; Conditional, 29.

Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

I. MODAL.

The Modal use of the appositive participle is far more frequent in Anglo-Saxon prose than in the poetry, 257 examples occurring in the former and 62 in the latter.

Of these 319 examples 254 are present and 65 are past.

An object is rarely used with the modal participle, only 16 occurring with the present participle and 22 with the preterite.

Though occurring in all periods of Anglo-Saxon, the modal participle is much more common in the works of Alfred than in those of any other author. In his Bede and his Gregory the construction is especially frequent, about one-third of all the examples being found in these two works. Here, as my statistics show, the Anglo-Saxon participle often translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; and the frequency of the gerund in the two originals has doubtless caused the large number of modal participles in the two translations.

As stated above, the modal participle denotes both manner and means. It is not always easy to tell which notion
predominates, but the examples below will, it is hoped, sufficiently illustrate the two tendencies.

Some participles denoting manner, instead of being equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause, are practically equivalent to a simple adverb, as in: *Bede*¹ 86. 22a:b: *Sæt he weecerende ðohte ðæt he [no] weotende ærænde = 60. 28: quia, quod cogitauit seiens, hoc pertulit nesciens; *ib.* 38. 1: *Pa... he calle ða witt... geþyldeðæge gefeonde ðæer = 20. 1: Qui... patienter hæc pro Domino, immo gaudenter ferebat; *ib.* 310. 30: *Pa* we seondon arfaestlice fylgende γ viætvældrænde = 239. 23: Hos itaque sequentes nos pic atque orthodoxe; *Ælf. Hom.* 1. 52b: he for ðæm stæwendum velwillende gehæð; *Mat.* 5. 11: seegeað æle yfel ongen cow leogende for me = dixerint omne malum adversum vos mentientes propter me; etc., etc. Personally I believe it would be better to class such words as participial adverbs rather than adverbial participles; but, as I hesitate to set up new categories, in my statistics I have retained them under the ordinary rubric, save in one or two cases that could not be construed as participles, like *ðreagende* (*Greg.*¹ 159. 18, etc.: see Statistics). This use of the participle as an adverb, it is well known, is common in Greek (see Goodwin, *Greek Grammar*, § 1564) and in Latin (see Gildersleeve, *Latin Grammar*, § 325. 6). In Old High German it was so very frequent that there was developed a regular adverbial form of the participle in -o (*O. Erdmann, Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, § 359; see below, Chapter v.*). I have not, however, found this use of the participle treated in Koch, Mätzner, March, or in the dissertations on Old English syntax. There is perhaps a suggestion of it in Cosijn (I., p. 97), who writes of *Greg.*¹ 159. 18: “adverbialisch *ðreagende*?” Further illustrations are given under “(2) Manner” below.

(1) Means.

I. In Prose.

*Bede*¹ 22. 9: *Paet se b. æne dumbne moom gebiddende gehælde = 282. 30: Ut episcopus mutum benedict
mendo curauerit. So gebiddende = orando in Bede\(^1\) 22. 11, 22. 14, etc.—Ib. 72. 3\(a^b\): Ætte oft [seo cirice] sæt widerworde yfel abecorende = alend bewered = 51. 29: ut sepe malum quod adversatur portando et dissimulando compescat.—Greg.\(^1\) 53. 16: Sua si mielat, cræftiga hiertende toscyf\(a\) & egesende stierð ofenretta mid sære talinge his hieremonnum, sæt he hie gebringe on līfe = 30\(a\): Magnus enim regendi artifex favoribus impellit, terroribus retractat: ut etc.—Ib. 81. 10, 11: sæt is sæt he spreccende bebiæ sæt he sæt wyrcende Ædieве, sæt hit Æurh Æone sultum sie fornægengie = 54\(a\): quia quod loquendo imperat, ostendendo adjuvat ut etc.—Ib. 127. 6, 7: sæt mod his hieremonna oliceende egesige & Œreatigende oliceæ = 88\(b\): terrendo demulceat, et tamen ad terroris reverentiam demulcendo constringat.—Ib. 225. 22: Sæ monuðwærnesse Ææ he æ æurhtogen hæﬂicæ eæt Œœahtigende on yfel gewend [Cotton MS.: gewent] = 170\(b\): et mansuetudinem, quam tolerantes habuerunt, retractantes in malitiam vertunt.

Bewd.\(^1\):—2. 10: nellen ge ælœende eowere heortan ahyrdan = 4. 15: nolite obdurare corda vestra.

Bl. Horn. :—89. 34\(a^b\): raðe he lifgende ut eode of his byrgerenne mid his agenre mihte ævæht.

Ælfrie:—Hom. 1. 226\(b\): Mare miht wæs, sæt he Æone Ææð mid his æriste Ætbræce, Æonne he his lif gehelode, of sære rode astigende.—Ib., 11. 182\(a^b\): Æone æ B. na handlunge æ on-besæonde fram his bendum alysde.

Gosp.:—Lk. 12. 25: Hwylc eower maeg Æœente Æian ænce to his anicienesse? = Quis autem vestrum cogitando potest adjicere ad staturam suam cubitum unum?—Mk. 15. 30: gehæl Æe sylfrne of sære rode stigende = Salvum fac temetipsum descendens de cruce.

II. In Poetry.

El.:—449: Ææ maeg æfræ oser sæt Ebrea Æod ærod æœahtente rice headan. [May be adjectival, as Schürmann and Garnett hold.]
(2) **Manner.**

**I. In Prose.**

Ælfred:—*Bede* 72. 9: *sa ðe him ne ondrælað wrotonde syngian = 52. 1: qui non metuunt sciendo pescare.*—*Ib. 102. 21: is sægd ðæt he beotigendæ forecweæde = 83. 27: furtur minitas praxixisse.*—*Boeth.* 3. 7: Hu B. hine sing-ende gebæl, þ his earfoðu to Gode mænde.*—*Ib. 9. 29: Ongan ða Siddien, þ ðus singende cwæð.*—*Ib. 8. 15: þa ic ða ðis leð, cwæð B., geomriende asungen hæfde, ða com etc. = 4. 2: Hæc dum mecum tacitus ipse reputarem quierimoni-amque lacrimabilem stili officio signarem, adstitisse . . . visa est mulier etc.*—*Greg.* 185. 9: æresð mon sceal sprecan asc ende, suelce he be ðrænum menn spece & ascie = 138a: prius per quasdam simililitudines velut de alieno negotio requirendi sunt.*—*Ib. 405. 31: hi ofermodgiende his gebod forhogdon = superbiens ejus jussa contemptis.*—*Ib. 379. 23: Hie sceoldon gehieran hu Esaias se witga hrovesigende hine selfne ælde = 294b: Audiant quod Isaiaus magna roce ponti-entiae se ipse reprehendit.*—*Ib. 381. 25: cwæð ðæt ða sceolden biôn synderlice Godes ðegnas, ða ðe unwæend ðæara scyldegena gjyltas ofslogen = 296b: illos a parte Dei de-nuntiavit existere, qui delinquentium seclera incumtante ferirent dicens (or adverb ?).*—*Ib. 117. 23: Forðam we becð mid Gode sua miele suiðor gebundne sua we for monnum orsorglicor ungevinode syngiað = 82a: Tanto ergo apud Dominum obligatiores sumus, quanto apud homines inutile peccamus.*

Ælfric:—*Hom.* 1. 54a: ðæt ðu scealt mitilsigende forgifan.—*Ib. 1. 340a*: he hit ber on his exlum to ðære eowde blissigende.

Gosp.:—*Mat.* 6. 5: ða luifiað ðæt hig gehidden hì standende on gesomnungum = qui amant in synagogis . . . stantes orare.—*Mk.* 5. 40: inn-eodon suiviende ðær ðæt máden wæs = ingreditur ubi puella erat jacens.—*Ib. 9. 24: wepende cwæð = cum lacrymis aiebat.—*Lk.* 22. 65: manega ðære Sing hig him to cwadon dysigende = alia multa blasphe- mantes dicebant in eum.
II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2062: him se orderid onan losad wigende, con him land geare. [If we adopt Heyne’s $li$gende, the participle is Final instead of Modal. See below under Final].—Ib. 2235: swa hy on geardagum gumena nathwyle eormenlafæ ædelan eunnas $San$hyegende $ær$ gehydde.—Ib. 2595: niwan stefne nearo $ðrowode fyre befongen$, se $ðæs ær$ solce weold. [May be Adjectival, but is more probably Modal, as K. Köhler puts it.]

Andr. 1557: hean, hygegeomor, $herfende$ spræc. [May be Adjectival.]

Gen. 1582: ac he $hlihende$ broðrum sægde.

II. TEMPORAL.

The second most frequent use of the adverbial appositive participle is to denote relations of time. If we use the term temporal in a very broad sense, no doubt a number of participles that I have put under other rubrics might be put here, since almost any participle may be looked upon as indicating after a fashion a time relationship. But I have classed as temporal only those participles in which the idea of time seems definite rather than general. Of the 248 temporal participles in Anglo-Saxon, 200 are found in the prose, and 48 in the poetry.

Of these participles 166 are in the present tense, and 82 in the preterite.

As with the modal participle, so here an object is rare; 28 occurring with the present participle and 10 with the preterite.

As my table shows, the temporal participle is sprinkled throughout the periods of Anglo-Saxon.

Examples follow:—

I. In Prose.

Ælfred:—Bede¹ 214. 11: swa eft onlysed $ðy$ liehamon byrneð = 166. 4: ita solutus corpore ardebit.—Ib. 264. 25:
song ða *ingongende* ealle gefylde = 208. 25: quod *ingressa [== uox] totum impleuit.*—*Ib.* 142. 8: sægde he ðæt he hine [i. e., here, sanctuary] eneolt *weosende* gesawe (MS. Ca: hine cuđe eniht *wesende*) = 116. 12: se in *pueritia* uidisse testabatur.—*Greg.*¹ 93. 9: Hit is geceuden ðæt se sacerd scolde sweltan, gif se sweg nere of him gehiered ægðer ge *ingongendum* ge *utgongendum*, etc. = 62b: Sacerdos manque *ingrediens vel egressi* moritur, si de eo sonitus non audi tur.—*Ib.* 399. 14: Sio Segor gehælde Loth *fleondne* = 318ª: Segor civitas, quæ *fugientem* salvet infirmum.

Ælfric:—*Hom.* 1. 232ª: Crist æbleow ðone Halgan Gast ofer ða apostolas, ðæ-gyt *wuwilgende* on cordan.—*Ib.* 11. 250ª²: Se H. ða stod on ðam domerne *gelledd*.

Gosp.:—*Mat.* 7. 6: hig ðonne ougenan *gewende* eow toslyton = *conversi* dirumpunt vos.—*Mk.* 15. 15: sealde him ðone hælend *beswangenæ* = tradidit Jesum flagellis *cæsum* (or *Adjectival*).

II. In Poetry.

Beow.:—535: Wit ðæt *gegewedon* eniht-*wesende*.—*Ib.* 815: wæs gehwæðer oðrum *lifigende* lað.

El.:—529: ðus mee fæder min on fyrdagum *uneaxenne* wordum læede.

Gen.:—2169: ac ie ðe *lifigende* her wið weana gehwam wreo ð sceylde.

III. CAUSAL.

Of the 228 Causal Participles, 157 belong to the prose and 71 to the poetry.

The present participle is found 56 times, the preterite 172 times.

An object occurs with the present participle in 23 instances, and with the preterite in 51 instances.

The causal use is pretty evenly distributed throughout the various prose and poetical texts.

Not a few of the examples are doubtful.
I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede¹ 8. 5: Ṯæt Bryttas mid ðy mærran hungre geneóde ða elcreordian of heora gemærum adrifan = 29. 12: Ut Brettones fame famosa coæti barbaros suis e finibus pepulerint.—Ib. 62. 13: he ða geÆronde ðæs gefulwod = 47. 22: credens baptizatus est.—Ib. 186. 31: ac heo swa ondræcendæ from him gewat = 151. 10: quin in tantum timens aufugit.

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 380ᵇ²: he feallende toberæt on feower stícæ.—Ib. 1. 594ᵇ¹: Egeas geæbylygd het hine ahon.

Gos. — Mk. 3. 5ᵇ: ofer hyra heortan blindnesse gewþret cwæð = contristatus super æceitate . . . dicit.—Mat. 14. 8: ða cwæð heo fram hyre meder gemyngod = At ðilla promonitæ a matre sua . . . inquit (or Temporal?).—Ib. 15. 31: swa ðæt ða mænegu wundredon gesÆonënæ dumbe spreæende etc. = ïta ut turæ mirarentur videntes mutos loquentes.—Lk. 4. 28: ða wurdon ðig ealle on ðære gesammunge mid yrre gefyldæ, ðæs ðing geæhyrende = Et repleti sunt omnes in synagoga iræ, hæc audientæ.

II. In Poetry.

Andr. 436: waætæregæ sceal geðynæ þ geðreatod ðurch ðryð-cining, lagæ acæende lîðra wyrðan.—Ib. 746: oððæ sel nyton moðe gemyrðæ.

Æl. 1128: he ðæn næglæ onféng egeæn geæclæð þ ðære arwyrðæn æwene brøhte.

Gen. 1571: Swiðæ on sæpe sêfa nearwoodæ, ðæt he ne mihte on gemyngd drepen hine handum self mid hrægære wrynæ þ sceomæ þeccan.

IV. FINAL.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is rare, only 40 examples having been found; 39 in the prose, and 1 in the poetry (doubtful).

This use is confined almost exclusively to the present participle; but one example occurs in the preterite (Ælfr. Hom. 1. 134ᵇ), and that is doubtful.
The final participle has an object oftener than not; of the 39 present participles 35 have an object. The single example of the preterite participle has no object.

A glance at the table will show that only three examples have been found in Early West Saxon: two in *Bede*, each answering to a Latin participle; and one in *Gregory*, corresponding to a Latin infinitive of purpose. Most of the examples occur in *Ælfric’s Homilies* and in the *Gospels*.

Among the examples may be cited:—

I. In Prose.

*Ælfric*:—*Bede* 1. 10. 7: bodode; þæt swa mid his lef-nyssé Godes word bodigende on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic Cantiam practicatus intraurit (or Pred.?).—*Ib. 276. 12:* licode us efencuman æfter ðæawe arwyrdra rehta smægende be ðan etc. = 215. 1: plaeuit conuenire nos, tractatus de etc.—*Greg.* 61. 3: ſe læce . . . ðe gæð æfter ðæra monna husum leenigende = 36*: percussum mederi properat.

*Bened.* 135. 27: some heora finda and wædas gemiceldæ, idel lop fram mannum begytende = 232. 2: alii limbras et phylacteria sua magnificent, gloriæ captantes ab hominisbus. —*Ib. 134. 13:* Oder cyn is muneca, ðe feor fram mannum gewitað ond westestowa and ælætu and anwunung gelufiað, geefelæcende Elian = 231. 6: Secundum genus est eremitarum qui, proeul ab hominisbus recedentes, deserta loca et vastas solitudines sequi, atque habitare perhibenter, ad imitationem scilicet Eliaæ.

*Ælfric*:—*Horn.* 1. 74*: Hi ða begen ðone apostol gesohton, his milstunge biddende.—*Ib. 1. 134*: gebrohte ðæt cild ðæ heo aceonde, H. C., gelæcod to ðam Godes temple (or adjectival?).—*Ib. 1. 338*: “ðonne forlæt he ða nigon and hund-nigontig on westene and gæð secende ðæt an ðe him losode” [or Pred.? Cf. *Mat.* 18. 12: gæð and secð = vadit querere].

*Gosp.*—*Mat.* 19. 3: ða genealehton him to farísæi lyme costnigende þæ cwæolon = Et accesserunt ad eum Pharissæi ten-
tantes eum, et dicentes.—Lk. 2. 45: hig gewendon to hierusalem hyne secende = regressi sunt in Jerusalem requirentes eum.—J. 6. 6: sæt he cwæð his findigende = Hoc autem dicebat tentans eum. So J. 8. 6: findicende.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2062: if we read lifigende; but we have the modal use if we read wigende (see above, under Modal).

Dan. 355: weardæ se hata lig todrifwen ð todwæseed, sær ða deælhwaton geond ðone ofen eodon ð se engel mid, feorh nerigende, se ðe sær seordæ wæs, Annanias ð Azarias ð Miscel (or pred.?).

V. CONCESSIVE.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is somewhat rarer even than the final. 33 examples occur in all, 25 in the prose, and 8 in the poetry.

Of these 19 are in the present, and 14 in the past tense.

An object is very rare, only 4 occurring with each of the two participles.

As to its distribution, but three examples have been found in Early West Saxon, namely, one each in Bede, Gregory, and Orosius, the two first corresponding to Latin participles, and all being doubtful. Most of the instances are in the Gospels. One example occurs in each of these poems: Beowulf, Elene, Genesis, Guthlac, Juliana, and Metres of Boethius, and two in the Phoenix.

The following will serve as examples:—

I. In Prose.

Æfred:—Bede 278. 18b: Gif he æne sípa onfongen, haten ham hweorfan, ne wille, etc. = 216. 16b: Quod si semel susceptus noluerit invitatus redire, etc. [May be temporal, as Miller translates.]—Greg. 153. 1: Ac monige scylda open-
lice vitene beoð to forberanne = 110ª: Nonnulla autem vel aperte cognita, mature toleranda sunt, etc. [May be adjectival.]- Oros. 250. 14: Æfter ðæm Germanic gesohton Agustus ungeniedde him to friðe. [May be modal.]

Ælfrie:—Hom. i. 596ª: forðan ðe he ne geswicð sōð to bodigenne, nu twegen dagas eacen hangigende.

Gosp.:—Matt. 13. 13ª b: forðam ic spece to him mid bigspellum, forðam ðe lociende hig ne geseoð ð gehýrende hig ne gehýræð = quia violentes non videat, et audientes non audiunt. So: Mk. 4. 12ª b; Lk. 8. 10ª a b.—Lk. 5. 5 b: Eala beboedend ealle niht swinctende we naht ne gefengon = Præceptor, per totem noctem laborantes, nihil cepimus.—Ib. 6. 35: læne syllæ nan ðing ðanum eft gehýtende = date, nihil inde sperantes.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 2350: for ðon he ær fela nearo neðende niða gedigde. [K. Köhler classes as modal, but Garnett translates as concessive.]

Gen. 2649: Me sægde ær sæt wif hire wordum selfa unfriengendum, sæt etc.

Guth. 1260: Bad se ðe seolde cadig on elne endedogor wælstrælum. [Furkert: Pred. after intransitive verb, but Gollancz translates as appositive and concessive.]


Phoenix: 162: Ðonne waðum strong west gewiteð wintrum gebysgad fleogan feðrum snel —Ib. 368: Forðon he drusende deáð ne bisorgðæ.

Metres of Boeth. 11. 34: Swa hæfð geheáðerod hefonrices weard mid his anwealdc ealle gesecæta, sæt hiora æghwile wið oðer winð, þ ðeha wínnende wrediað feste = 48. 3: Quod pugnantia semina foedus perpetuum tenent.
VI. CONDITIONAL.

Least frequent of all the adverbial uses of the appositive participle is the conditional. Of the 29 examples 13 are in the prose and 16 in the poetry.

The present participle is used 4 times, the preterite 25.

Twice the present participle has an object, and 11 times the preterite participle.

In Early West Saxon, I have found only 4 examples (1 in *Bede* and 3 in *Boethius*). Late West Saxon, also, has very few examples, there being one doubtful example in *Elfrie* and two in the Gospels. In the poetry are represented *Beowulf* (2), *Genesis* (3), *Exodus* (2), *Eadgar* (1), *Andreas* (3), *Eliene* (2), *Riddles* (2), and *Metrical Psalms* (1).

As my quotations show, several of these examples are quite doubtful.

Typical examples are:

I. In Prose.

*Elfred:*—*Bede* 278. 18*: Gif he æne siða onfongen haten ham hweorfan [ne wille] = 216. 16*: Quod si semel suscepimus noinerit imitatus redire etc.—*Boeth.*¹ 30. 25. 26: Ac gis hi yfele sint ȝ lytige ðonne sint hi ðe pliolicere ȝ geswinefulran hæfd ðonne hæfd; forðæm yfele ðegnas biðe sihte heora hlafordes fiend = 37. 47f.: Quí si utiosi moribis sint, perniciosa domus sarcina et ipsi domino nehementer inimica.—*Ib.* 91. 8: Ne maeg ic nane ewece wuht ongitan ðara ðe wite hwæt hit wille, ðonde hwæt hit nyłe, ðe ungened lyste forweordan = 78. 45: nihil inuenio, quod nullis extra cogentibus abiciant manendi intentionem et ad iterum sponte festinent.

*Bened.*¹ 28. 2: *gencadød* to anre mile gange, gang willes twa = 54. 7: *angariati* milliarior vadunt duo.—*Ib.* 28. 6.

*Gosp.*:—*Mk.* 7. 15: Nis nan ðing of ðam men gængende ðæt hine besmitan mæge = Nihil est extra hominem introiens in eum quod possit eum coquinore. [May be adjectival or
temporal.]—*Ib. 7. 18*: Ne ongyte ge sæt eall sæt utan cymða on ðone man *gangende* ne mæg hine besmitan? = Non intelligitis quia omne extrinseicus introiens etc. [May be temporal.]

II. In Poetry.

*Beow.* 1368, 1370: *Seah se hæðstapa hundum geswenced*, heorot hororum trum holtwudu sece, *feorran geflyned*, ær he feorh seleð.

*Gen.* 1263: *Siðan hundtwelftig geteled rime wintra on worulde wraec bисgedon fiæge soða*. So *geteled rime(s)*: *Gen.* 1336, 2344; *Exod.* 372; *Andr.* 1035; *Eadgar* 11; *El.* 2 and 634; *Metr.* *Ps.* 67, 17.

*Exod.* 232: Wæs on anra gehwam æðelan cynnes alesen under lindum leoda duguðe on folegetel fiftig cista; hæfde cista gehwile cuðes werodes garberendra, guðfremmendra x-hund *geteled* tireadigra.

*Andr.* 883: Swylce we gesegon for suna meotudes æðelum ecne eowic standan, twelfe *getealde*, tireadige hæleð.

*Riddles* 24. 15, 16: Nelle ic *unbunden* ænigum byran nymðe *searosceled*. Saga, hwæt ic hatte! [24. 15 may be temporal.]

III. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS SUBSTANTIALLY EQUIVALENT TO AN INDEPENDENT CLAUSE.

Of the 890 co-ordinate participles 871 are found in the prose, and 19 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 869 times, and the preterite 21 times.

An object is found far more frequently with the co-ordinate than with the adjectival or the adverbial participle, there being 633 instances with the present, and 2 with the past participle.

The co-ordinate participle is very rare in Early West Saxon and in the poetry; and whenever it occurs in the works of
Ælfræd, it is in translation of a Latin appositive participle. It is very common in Benedict, in the works of Ælfræd, in the Gospels, and in Bede.

I add a few examples to those already given in defining the co-ordinate use of the appositive participle. They are arranged under two heads: (1) the participle denotes an accompanying circumstance; (2) the participle repeats the idea of the principal verb. The former may conveniently be designated as the “circumstantial” participle in the narrower sense; the latter, as the “iterating” participle.

(1) The “Circumstantial” Participle.

1. In Prose.

Ælfræd:—Bede\textsuperscript{1} 312. 23\textsuperscript{a,b}: we wuldriađ usserne Drihten swa swa ðas wuldredon, noht toatecende oððe onweg atconde = 240. 18\textsuperscript{a,b}: glorificamus Dominum sicut . . . nihil addentes ne subtrahentes.—Ib. 312. 25, 27: ða ðe heo onfengon we eac swelce onfoð, wuldriende God Fæder ðæs Sunn = 240. 20, 21, 22: . . . suscipimus, glorificantes Deum et filium eius.—Ib. 332. 16: Forðon ðe in ðæm ðealan mynstre . . . Hereswið . . . regollicum ðeodsceipum underðeode, in ða tid baed ðone ean sige = 253. 10: Nam H., . . ., regularibus subdita disciplinis; expectabat (doubtful).—Other examples:—Bede 10. 12: biddende = petens; 14. 4: biddende = postulans; 310. 1: feohrende = compaignantes; 438. 30: sittende = residens. —Oros,\textsuperscript{1} 12. 32, 33: ðonne forð ðo nan west irrênde heo tolîð on twa ymb an igland ðe mon hlæt Mereon, ðo nan bugende ut on ðone Wendelsæ . . . ðæt seo en bið flowende ofer eal Ægypta lond = 13. 20, 22: Ægyptus inferior . . . habet . . . fluviüque Nilum, qui etc. . . . deinde din ad occasum profluentes, faciensque insulam nomine Mercen in media sui: novissime ad septentrionem inflexus plana Ægypti rigat.

Chron. 656 E (p. 33\textsuperscript{a}): seo ðapa seonde ða his writ ðas cwæðend (or adjectival?). So 675 E (p. 35\textsuperscript{a}).
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 287

Beow. 30. 3: swigean headende ne spreece ơð ȝæt he geah-sod sy = 56. 19: taciturnitatem habens usque ad interrogationem non loquatur.
Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 48*: And gebigde his enowun, mid micelre stemne elypigende etc.—Ib. 1. 62*: Johannes besetha to heofonum, ȝus swigendende.
Benet 31. 16: mid ealræ gehyrsumnæssa hine sylfne ȝeowðe ealdre georkevenende drihtnes = omni obedientia se subdat majori, inmutans dominum.

II. In Poetry.

Beow. 916: Hwilum flitende fealwe stræte mearum mæton.
Christ 950: Ond on seofon healfa swogæð windas, blawæð breceede bearhtma mæste.—Ib. 1016: Fordon nis æñig wundor hu him woruldmonna seo melæne gecynd earum sordgænde hearde ȝondrede ȝonne etc. (or adjectival?)
Met. Ps. 50. 1. 56 (Cot.): Ac ȝu synfulle simle lærdæ, ȝæt hio cærende Criste herdon ȝ hiom lif mid ðe langsum begeton.

(2) The “Iterating” Participle.

I. In Prose.

Ælfric:—Bede 1 330. 30: heo of corðan alasæd leorde ðy fifteode dæge etc. = 252. 20: de terris ablata transuiuit.—Ib. 210. 26: wool ... seo ȝ wide græmigende micle menigeo monna afylde ȝ fornorn = 192. 4: longe lateque descei-ens ... strautit.—Ib. 312. 2: æfter heora lare ... geðwærelice
we gelyfæd ondetende 239. 24: iuxta doctrinam eorum pro-

fessi credimus consonanter, et confitemur.—Oros. 240. 9:

wepende mænde ða unare.

Chron. 1083 E: gynre cleopedon to Gode his miltse

biddende (or final?).

Bened. 4. 10: Be ðæm ilican andgyte se hælend cwîð on

ðæm halgan godspelle ðæs cygniende = 8. 16: Unde et Do-

mius in Evangelio ait.—Ib. 11. 8: hi ðæah forhogiende me

forsawon = 18. 21: ipsi autem contemnentes spreverunt me

(or modal?).

Ælfric:—Hom. 1. 104: ðæs Fæder stemm of heofenum

hlude swegde, ðæs cwætende.—Ib. 1. 294: him to spræc

ymbe Godes rice, samod mid him reordigende.

Gosp.:—Mat. 8. 31: ðæ deofla soðlice hyne bædon, ðæs

cwætende = ðæmones autem rogabant eum dicentes.—Ib. 9.

30: se h. bebead him cwætende = comminatus est illis Jesus,

dicens.—Ib. 11. 25: Se h. cwæð andswaerende = respondens

Jesus dixit.—Ib. 12. 10: hi alhusum hyne ðæs cwætende =

interrogabat eum, dicentes.—Ib. 13. 31: He rehte him ða

gyt oðer big-spel, ðæs cwætende = . . . proposuit eis, dicens.

—Mk. 3. 11: ðæs cwætende cyypedon = clamabat dicentes.

Wulfst. 199. 15: be ðæm awrat Iohannes on ðære bee,

dæ man hat apocalipsin, ðæs cwætende. So 201. 8.—Ib. 246.

11: swa se witega ðe læð ðæs cwætende: sepi aures tuas

spinis.

Benet. 30. 14: gewrit bebyt scegendo = scriptura praecipit

dicens.

II. In Poetry.

Andr. 59: He ða wepende woregum tearum his sigeduhten

sargan reorde, grette gymerna brego geomran stefne.

Christ 387: Forðan hy, daeglwæte, dome geswiðe, ðæt

soðfaste seraphines cynn, uppe mid englum a bremende,

unadreotendum stynumum singað. [Hertel: pred. after

intransitive verb.]—Ib. 992: Wepað wanende wergum
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 289

stefnum, heane, hygegeomre, hreowum gedreahete. [Hertel: attrib., but Gollancz: "weep and moan."

Guth. 401: Bonan gnornedon, mendon murnende, sæt etc. [May be adjectival or modal.]—Ib. 879: hwilum wedende swa wilde deor eircmon on corðre.

Jul. 662: Wæric me dincæ, sæt ge wevecende wið het-
tendra hildewoman weardæ healdan.

Spirit of Men 82: Forðon we sculon a hycgende hælo rædes gemunan in mode male gehwylecum sone selesstan sigora waldend! Amen!

Harrowing of Hell 91: Æonne hy gehyrdon, hu we hro-
w[ige] [mendo]n murnende meg burg usse. [May be adjectival or modal.]

Met. Ps. 104. 10: And him ða mid sode sægde, ecæðende =
Et statuit illud Jacob in præceptum, et Israel in testamentum æternum, dicens.—Ib. 105. 4: Genum us, drithen, on mod-
sesan forn hycgende folces ðines ð us mid hælo her geneose = Memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui; visita nos in salutari tuo.—Ib. 138. 17: Blodhreowe weras! ge bebugað me, ðæ sæt on geðohtum ðenceæ ecæðende = Viri sanguimum declinate a me; quia dicitis in cogitationibus vestris. [Cf. 104. 10: where ecæðende = dicens.]—Ib. 146. 10: Ŝe ðæ mete syleð manegum neatum, hrefnes briddum, Æonne heo hropende him eigeað to, cudes æses = Sui dat jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum invocantibus enum.

NOTES.

1. Present Participle in a Passive Sense.—I have found no instance of the present participle used in a passive sense in Old English. [Cf. Kellner, Syntax des Englischen Verbums, p. 85 f.; Koch, II, p. 72; Mätzner, II, p. 56; Sweet, § 2312; and, for the Germanic languages in general, O. Erdmann, Grundzüge, I, § 132 f.; Falk and Torp, § 138, i; and Grimm, IV, p. 68.]
2. Passive Participle in an Active Sense.—The preterite participle of intransitive verbs has an active sense, such as cumen, forðfered, etc.: Bede\(^1\) 396. 20: in ðære he forðfered bebyrðed heon sceolde = 228. 9: in quo defunctus condi debetur; Ælf. L. S. 462. 351: ðæsæt hi becomon to sumnum ænlicium felda fægere geblowen (sic!); Bl. Hom. 87. 36: befaðlen to Hælendes cneowum, he cwæð; Mat. 7. 6: hig ðonne ongean gewende eow toslyton = conversi dirumpant vos. Cf. beowæð in Mk. 5. 30; L. 7. 9, 10. 23, etc. Occasionally, too, the past participle of transitive verbs has an active sense: Greg.\(^1\) 435. 1: gif hi færlecor syngoden unbeðode = 360. 7: si in his sola praecipitatione cecidissent (or adverb?); Ælf. L. S. xxiv. 2: wæron twegen kyningas on cristi gelysfe; ib. xxv. 109, xxviii. 15, etc. (see Statistics); Ælf. Hom. i. 66. 12: ðonne færlíc gewitt he of ðissere worulde, nacet and forsechlabod. But, as in High German (see Grimm as cited below), the use of the preterite participle in an active sense occurs usually, not when the participle is appositive, but when it is attributive or predicative, or has been substantivized; under one of which heads come most of the examples cited by Mätzner, March, Schrader, and Sohrauer. Druncca in wine druncen and in beore druncen, cited by Mätzner and by March as active, seems to me passive in sense. [See Kellner, Syntax des Verbums, p. 97 f.; Koch, ii, p. 72; Mätzner, iii, p. 93; March, § 455; Schrader, § 104; Sohrauer, p. 31; Sweet, § 2356; and, for Germanics, O. Erdmann, Grundzüge i., § 133; Falk and Torp, § 138, ii; Grimm, iv., p. 73.]

3. Supplementary Particles.—Only slight use is made of supplementary particles, which serve the more clearly to indicate the relationship of the participial to the main clause. They seem to be confined to the late West Saxon prose. Examples: swa swa: Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 234: ongan he sworetan swa swa callunga geweceend on ðam orðe belocen; swa ðeah: Ælf. Hept. Numb. 15. 44: Hig swa ðeah ablende
beotlicæ astigon = At illi contenebrati ascenderunt; *ib. Ælf. L. S. xxxi. 42;—swa-seah-hwæðere: Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 285: ic eom synful wif, swa-seahhwaðere utan ymbeald mid ðam halgan fulluhte;—swilce: Ælf. Hom. 1. 60<sup>b</sup>: Drusiana ða aras swilce of slape awreht; *ib. Ælf. L. S. 158. 174, xxv. 513, xxx. 411, etc.;—ða: Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 587: Zosimus ða witodlice gehyrende ðæt... he hire to cwæð; *ib. Mk. 8. 13;—Sonne: Mat. 7. 6: hig ðonne ongean gewende eow tosliton = et conversi dirumpunt; *ib. Ælf. Hom. 1. 38<sup>b</sup>; Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 115.—Mätzner (iii, pp. 73, 90) mentions only swilce.

4. Pleonastic "and."—As with the absolute participle (see Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon, p. 21) so with the appositive there is occasionally a pleonastic and: Bede<sup>1</sup> 450. 20; Oros.<sup>1</sup> 12. 32, 33; Bl. Hom. 243. 7; Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 542, 560, 588, etc., etc. The same is true of Gothic and of Old High German (Gering, p. 401).

I close this chapter with tables showing the distribution of the appositive participle in its several uses (adjectival, adverbal, and co-ordinate), in the whole of Anglo-Saxon Literature.
### SUMMARY OF USES.

#### I.—In the Prose Works.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ADJECTIVAL</th>
<th>ADVERBIAL</th>
<th>CO-ORDINATE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>N.</td>
<td>W.</td>
<td>N.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bede</td>
<td>107</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boeth.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greg.</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oros.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ps. Th.</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chron.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Laws.</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bene.</td>
<td>63</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bl. Hom.</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. Hom.</td>
<td>477</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>159</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. L. S.</td>
<td>335</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>288</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. de V.</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elf. Hept.</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Hom.</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&amp; L. S. II</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## II.—In the Poems.

**Longer Poems:**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Beow.</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gen.</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exod.</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dan.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleon.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jul.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gu.</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rid.</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>And.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phoenix</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metr.</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metr. Ps.</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Total Present:** 2443

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Total Present:** 4083

---

1 Without object, 368; with object, 101.

2 Without object, 217; with object, 5.
## SUMMARY OF USES.

### II.—In the Poems.—Continued.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Minor Poems</th>
<th>Total</th>
<th>Adjectival</th>
<th>Adverbial</th>
<th>Co-ordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Az. (Pres.)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Az. (Pret.)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cal. S. (Pres.)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charms (Pret.)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christ's Deh (Pres.)</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scent, etc. (Pret.)</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>4</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Creed (Pres.)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doomsday (Pret.)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dream of (Pres.)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eadward (Pret.)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edgar (Pret.)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fallen (Pres.)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fates of (Pres.)</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Men (Pret.)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gloria (Pret.)</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>Pret.</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Gnom. V.</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Harrowing</strong></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Husband</strong></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Message</strong></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Inscription</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Judith</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Maldon</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Rune Song</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sat. and</strong></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sat.</strong></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Seafarer</strong></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Soul to</strong></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Bogy</strong></td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Spirit of</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Men</strong></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sammons</strong></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>to Prayer</strong></td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Waldere</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>(Pres.)</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Wanderer</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Whale</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Widith</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Wonders of</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Creation</strong></td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Total Present:** 148 48 12 25 3 30 3 2 1 3 1 15 4 69 69 19 125 23

**Total Preterite:** 419 84 198 13 20 10 8 16 50 4 5 11 224 127 19 128 291

**Total Pres. & Pret.** 567 132 210 29 23 40 8 19 52 1 3 5 5 11 15 4 342 206 19 233 314

1 Two in Lat.
2 Without object, 62; with object, 7.
### SUMMARY OF USES.

#### III.—IN THE PROSE AND IN THE POETRY.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Adjectival</th>
<th>Adverbial</th>
<th>Co-ordinate</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td>Total</td>
<td>Total</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres. in Prose</td>
<td>1636</td>
<td>222</td>
<td>95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pres. in Poetry</td>
<td>148</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pres</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret. in Prose</td>
<td>807</td>
<td>527</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pret. in Poetry</td>
<td>419</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pret</td>
<td>1226</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pres</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>270</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Total Pret</td>
<td>1226</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>237</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grand Total</td>
<td>3010</td>
<td>873</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER III.

ORIGIN OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

Is the appositive use of the participle a native English idiom, or is it borrowed from the Latin?

The only direct expressions that are known to me on this question are from Einenkel and myself. In his *Mittelenglische Syntax* (Münster, 1887), p. 273, in treating the present particle, Einenkel says: "Das Part. in appositiver Stellung (im Deutschen wiederzugeben durch Adjectiv-Satz) findet sich gelegentlich im AE., häufiger im Afranz., ist jedoch wol in keinem Falle ein einheimisches Gewächs, sondern stammt aus dem Lat., wo die Construction eine ganz gewöhnliche ist. Die verbale Kraft, die das so verwendete lat. part. besitzt, zeigt sich im AE. und Afranz." And in his chapter on English Syntax in Paul's *Grundriss*, § 129, he thus speaks of the preterite participle: "Zu erwähnen ist hier die schon im Altenglischen bekannte später zunehmende appositionelle Verwendung desselben, die vom Lateinischen hervorgerufen und später vom Altfranzösischen vielleicht auch vom Altnordischen unterstützt wird." Einenkel, then, holds that the appositive use of both the present and the past participle in Anglo-Saxon is due to Latin influence.

Before reading Einenkel's treatment I had come to the same general conclusion myself on noticing how sedulously Alfred avoided the use of the appositive participle in his translations from the Latin. And in my monograph on *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon* (p. 50), in treating of the stylistic effect of the participle in Anglo-Saxon, I incidentally recorded this belief: "Clearly relief was needed here [i. e., from the
heaping up of co-ordinate finite verbs]; and it came through the adoption of the appositive participle from the Latin.”

An indirect statement concerning the origin is this by Th. Müller (p. 250): “Doch ist hinzuzufügen, dass die Verwendung der Participlien zur Satzverkürzung im Ags. eine ziemlich beschränkte ist, namentlich die Verwendung des absoluten Particiips. . . . Im Englischen hat die Anwendung des Part, zur Satzverkürzung sehr an Umfang gewonnen, besonders durch Einwirkung des Französischen und Lateinischen . . . Im Ac. ist die Satzverkürzung durch das Partizip, noch beschränkt und nicht viel ausgedehnt, als im Ags.” A. Erdmann cautiously expresses himself as follows (p. 30): “However common this use [i.e., the appositive] of the participle present, as shown in ii: 1:0, undoubtedly is, still the general run of the language seems to be opposed to the too frequent recurrence of it. There are to be found in the Gospels, in spite of the general closeness of the translation, numerous instances of co-ordinate finite verbs or subordinate clauses substituted for Latin-Greek participles present. In many of these passages the English translation readmits the participle, conformably to the original text.” Owen (p. 61) seems to consider the construction native to English, though somewhat influenced by the Latin; but, as his statement is indefinite, it need not be quoted.

The statements of both Einenkel and myself were in the nature of the case incidental and general. May not the present detailed study of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon enable us to make definite statements with reference to at least several of the uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon? I believe it will; and I turn, therefore, to the consideration of the several distinctive uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

I. The Adjectival Use.

The appositive use of the present participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause, seems to have been largely due to Latin influence and never to have gained
a secure foothold in Anglo-Saxon, because, as my appended tables show:—(1) This use is rare in Early West Saxon.  
(2) In most of these Early West Saxon examples, the Anglo-Saxon participle is in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle.  
(3) The construction is rare, also, in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan).  
(4) It is very rare, too, in the poetry; and most of these examples occur in poems known to be translations of Latin originals.  
(5) It is common in Ælfric, in the Gospels, and in Benet. Of the 13 examples in the Heptateuch all but 2 are translations from the Latin; of the 44 examples in the Gospels every participle except 1; and of the 32 in Benet all except 2. Despite this, it is possible that the appositive use of a few slightly verbal participles like blissigende and gegeonde (see Æl. Hom. 5, 8ª & 8ª, p. 186 above), and libbende and liegende (see Laws: Cnut II, c. 24, Intr.ª & 8ª, p. 181 above) may be the native extension of the attributive use of such participles in postposition, the apposition arising from the fact that we have a series of participles, some with modifiers. [See above pp. 149, 152, and below on the origin of the adjectival appositive preterite participle.]  

Whether the foregoing be accepted or not, this much seems certain: the appositive present participle with a direct object is not native to English, a topic the treatment of which is deferred to the close of this chapter (p. 307).

On the contrary, the adjectival use of the appositive preterite participle is probably native; or, if first suggested by the Latin, was soon naturalized. To me this use seems merely the extension of the attributive use of the preterite participle in postposition (see pp. 149, 152 above) when there was a series of participles modifying a single noun, or when the participle had an object or a somewhat extended adverbial modifier; as in: Ælf. Hept. (Exod. 12. 19): ne ete ge nan ðing onhafenes, ne utan cymene ne innan lande geborene; ib. 29. 23: Þu nyst... ðane holne hlaf mid ele gesprengedne; Beow. 1126: Gewitun him ða wigend wica neosian freondum befal-
len Fryslan geseon. This difference as to the origin of the appositive present and of the appositive preterite participle is not in reality so strange as may at first appear; for, as already stated in the Introduction, the preterite participle is much more adjectival in nature than is the present participle; and, as our statistics show, in Anglo-Saxon the appositive use of the participle (whether present or past, and in whatever function) is in keeping with this general principle: the construction is most frequent when the participle manifests most of its descriptive (adjectival) and least of its assertive (verbal) power.

Whatever the explanation, it is a fact that the adjectival use of the preterite appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is far more common than that of the present participle, and it seems thoroughly naturalized, if not native. For our tables show (1) that the construction is common in Early West Saxon, in the more original prose works, and in the poetry, as well as in Ælfric, the Gospels, and Benet; and (2) that in the translations, notably in the Heptateuch, a considerable fraction of the appositive preterite participles used adjectivally are not translations of Latin participles.

The same distinction between the appositive present and the appositive preterite participle is found in the other Germanic languages (see chapter v).

II. THE ADVERBIAL USE.

1. Modal.

(1) Manner.

The appositive use of the participle (present and past) denoting manner, was probably native to Anglo-Saxon; if not, it was certainly early naturalized. We find this use very often in Early West Saxon, often in Ælfric and the Gospels, and occasionally in the more original prose and in the poetry. Moreover, in the translations, the Anglo-Saxon participle
corresponds not only to Latin participles, but also to Latin prepositional phrases, to nouns in the ablative, to finite verbs, to adjectives, and to adverbs; while in not a few cases there is no Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participle. Nor is the participle denoting manner confined to the poems known to be translations; on the contrary, the largest number of examples in any single poem is found in *Beowulf*. Finally, it may be said that in this use the participle has but slight verbal power; and hence the fact that the construction was native to Anglo-Saxon (or, if this be not allowed, was early naturalized), is what we should expect after what has been said above concerning the lack of verbal power in the Anglo-Saxon participle.

(2) Means.

The appositive use of the participle denoting means was in all probability not native to the English, but was borrowed from the Latin. It is found chiefly in the more direct translations and in the works of Ælfric, and in the former almost invariably corresponds to a Latin participle or to a Latin gerund in the ablative, in the majority of cases to the latter. It is practically unknown in the more original prose and in the poetry. Since the verbal power is more prominent in the participle denoting means than in that denoting manner, we need not be surprised at the difference in the origin (or the naturalness) of the two.

The modal participle in both of its uses has substantially the same history in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

2. Temporal.

With the exception of a few slightly verbal participles like *being*, *living*, and *sleeping*, the temporal use of the appositive participle, strange as it may seem, can hardly have been a native idiom in Anglo-Saxon. When it occurs in the prose translations, it is with but a few exceptions a direct transla-
tion of a Latin appositive participle. Only two examples occur in the more original prose (Laws, 1: Ine C. 35: Se de Seof slið, he met aðe gecyðan, set he hine fleonuðe for Seof sloge; and Wulfstan, 1: 295. 14: hi seulon fleonde on gefeohite beon ofslagene). As to the poetry, most of the examples occur in the poems that rest upon Latin originals. 14 examples, however, occur in Beowulf, nine in the present and five in the preterite (lifigende: 815 and 1953; unligigendum: 1389; slopende: 1581 and 2219; wesende (usually in composition with cniht and umbor): 46, 372, 535, 1187; druncen (in beore and wine druncen): 480, 531, 1467; forşwirtenum: 1479, which may be adjectival; and fyllæ gef(r)ægnod : 1333). But after all only five different words are involved; these are often used adjectivally, and the temporal use here may be partly due to that fact.* At any rate, the temporal use of the appositive participle can hardly be considered organic in a work showing only five words so used. Moreover, in Anglo-Saxon, time relations are normally denoted by a finite verb introduced by a subordinating conjunction, as is evidenced by its habitual rendering of the Latin temporal participle (see chapter iv).

In the other Germanic languages, also, the temporal use is restricted to participles of slightly verbal power, like being, living, sleeping (chapter v).

3. Causal.

The use of the appositive participle to denote cause seems, in the main, to be an imitation of the Latin. Few examples occur in Early West Saxon; and the majority of these as of those in other translations correspond to Latin participles, though a few answer to substantives in the ablative or to adverbs. The construction is exceedingly rare in the more

*Einenkel (Mittelengl. Syntax, p. 279) derives the temporal use of the preterite appositive participle from the adjectival (relative) use of the same.
original prose, there being but two examples in the *Chronicle* (1087 E: *gesonde*, which has an object and is therefore to be excluded from consideration; 449 A: Hengest Horsa from Wyrtgeorne *geleæode*, Bretta kyninge, gesohton Bretene (MS. E: *gelæode* Wyrtgeorn Angelcin hider; MS. F: *gelaæode* from Wyrtgeorne einge) and two in Wulfstan (133. 5a-b: *sculon eowre heortan eargjan swiðe* and eowra *féonda insegen strangjan* = 131. 23: *et animam uestrum tabescentem faciam, et persequuntur nos inimici uestri, et fugietis nullo persequente*).

In the poetry, but five examples occur with the present participle; two have an object (*Andreas* 1, and *Gudlac* 1) and are therefore not to be considered; while three occur in poems based on Latin originals (*Genesis* 2, *Exodus* 1). In all probability, then, the causal use of the present appositive participle is not native to Anglo-Saxon poetry. As to the past participle, as I have already said in a preceding chapter, many of the examples are doubtful and may be considered adjectival (relative). K. Köhler, for example, does not consider as causal any one of the nine examples that I have classed as such in *Beowulf*. Most of the other causal preterite participles in Anglo-Saxon poetry are in poems based on Latin originals; those in the prose have been discussed in the beginning of this paragraph.

It seems highly probable, therefore, that the causal use of the present participle in both prose and poetry is due to Latin influence; it seems probable that the causal use of the preterite participle is largely due to Latin influence, but that it is partly an extension of the adjectival use of the preterite participle, which latter has been shown to be so common in Anglo-Saxon. As is shown in chapter iv, the Latin causal participle is in Anglo-Saxon normally translated by a subordinated finite verb.

For the other Germanic languages, see chapter v.
4. Final.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is mainly from the Latin. But three examples occur in Early West Saxon, two corresponding to Latin participles and one to a Latin infinitive of purpose. No example has been found in the more original prose. The instances in the Gospels and in Beowulf correspond invariably to a Latin participle. The single example in the poetry (already quoted: Dan. 355: nerige) is from a poem based on the Latin. A still further reason for considering the final use unoriginal is this: 35 of the 39 present participles have an object (see p. 307 below). But, as the statistics show that the final participle in Old English occurs, as in Latin (Gildersleeve, Latin Grammar, § 670, 3), chiefly after verbs of motion, it may well be that the very frequent predicative use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon after verbs of motion contributed somewhat to its appositive use to denote purpose.

See, further, chapters iv and v.

5. Concessive.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is likewise to be ascribed to Latin influence. Of the three examples found in Early West Saxon, two are direct translations of Latin participles; while the third (ungeniedde in Oros. 250. 14), though without a Latin correspondence in this particular instance, answers to (non)coacti, which occurs elsewhere in Alfred's Latin originals (as in Bede² 29. 12: co-acti = 8. 5: genedde). No instance of the concessive participle has been found in the more original prose. Each example in the Gospels is in translation of a Latin participle. Of the eight examples in the poems, that in Beowulf (2350: nearo nedende) is considered modal by K. Köhler; the other seven occur in poems known to be from Latin originals (one each in Elene, Genesis, Guðlac,
The appositive participle denoting a condition is probably due to Latin influence. Four examples occur in Early West Saxon, of which one corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (Bede 278. 18*), one to a Latin absolute participle (Boeth. 91. 8), while two have no correspondents in Latin (Boeth. 30. 25, 26). Of the two examples in Benedic, one answers to a Latin participle, and one is without a correspondent. The two examples in the Gospels are translations of Latin participles, as are also the four in Benet. Only one example occurs in the remainder of Anglo-Saxon prose. Of the sixteen examples in the poetry, two are in Beowulf (1368: geswenced; 1370: geflymed), one in Eadgar (11 A: geteled rimes) three in Genesis (geteled rime(s) in 1263, 1336, and in 2344), two in Exodus 232: geteled tireadigr, 372: geteled rime), three in Andreas (309 (?): maximum bedeled, 883: twelwe getealde, 1035: geteled rime), two in Elene (2: geteled rimes, 634: geteled rime), two in the Riddles (24. 15: unbunden, 24. 16: searosealed), and one in the Metrical Psalms (67. 17: geteled rime).* In ten of these examples, however, the same word (geteled nine times, getealde once) is used; and, besides, the participle is not unmistakably conditional. From its frequent occurrence in Anglo-Saxon and its occasional employment in Old Saxon (Heliand 1251: tweliri gitalda), this seems to have been a favorite locution; but its use appears to have been phraseo-

---

*The translation of this phrase by Grimm (computati numero, note to Elene 1035 in his Andreas u. Elene), by Grein (gezähl der Zahl nach, in his Glossary sub v. rim), and by Kent (the number told, note to Elene 2) is, like the original, ambiguous, except that Kent does say that the participial phrase is used adverbially. Pratje (§ 158) considers the O. S. gitalda to be attributive.
logical rather than syntactical. The Beowulf examples, also, are doubtful. We know, too, that in Anglo-Saxon a condition is regularly denoted by a subordinated finite verb. I believe, therefore, that the use of the appositive participle to denote a condition is not a native English idiom, but was perhaps borrowed from the Latin.

See, too, chapters iv and v.

III. The Co-ordinate Use.

The co-ordinate participle, in both its “circumstantial” and its “iterating” uses, is a direct importation from the Latin. No clear example of the co-ordinate participle occurs in Gregory, and only sixteen examples in the remainder of Alfred’s works, each time in direct translation of a Latin participle. Three examples occur in the Chronicon and five in Wulfstan, all present participles with an object, and all due to Latin influence (see p. 307 below). No example is found in the Laws. With about a dozen exceptions all the examples in Benedict, in the Gospels, and in Benet are translations of Latin participles. In the Prose Psalms, however, only one of the sixteen co-ordinate participles answers to a Latin participle; but thirteen are present participles with an object, and, therefore, cannot be native English (p. 307).

In the poems, only nineteen examples occur: one in Beowulf (916: flitende), one in Andreas (59: wepende), four in Christ (387: bremende, 992: wanende, 950: breecende, 1016: sorgende), two in Guthlac (401: murnende, 879: vedende), one in Juliana (662: wecende), one in Spirit of Men (82: hycgende), one in the Harrowing of Hell (91: murnende), three in the Metres of Bede (20, 212: smugende, 20, 214, 221: seeende), and five in the Metrical Psalms (50, 56: cerrende, 104, 10: cvedende = dicens, 105. 4: hycgende, 138, 17: cvedende = dieitis, 146, 10: hropende = invocantibus). With the exception of Beow. 916 (which may not be co-ordinate) and of Spirit of Men 82 (of which I do not know the source), all the examples are from
poems known to be based on Latin originals. Two of the examples are in direct translation of Latin participles (Metr. Ps. 104. 10: cweÐende = dicens; 146. 10: hropende = invo-
cantibus), to which may confidently be added a third (Metr. Ps. 138. 17: cweÐende), though here answering to a finite verb, dicitis. Finally, the majority of the remaining examples (like brecende, murnende, sorgende, weccende, wanende, wedende, and wepeende) really waver between the co-ordinate use on the one hand and the adjectival and the modal on the other; indeed, brecende, murnende, sorgende, and wanende are expressly declared to be attributive by Hertel and by Furkert, and I have put them here despite their extreme doubtfulness merely to avoid the appearance of bending statistics to conformity with a theory. The few clear cases that remain of the co-ordinate use (like cerrende, hyygende, secende, and smeagende) may, I think, safely be attributed to Latin influence. The Latin co-ordinate participle is in Anglo-Saxon usually rendered by a co-ordinate finite verb (chapter iv).

The co-ordinate participle is likewise uncommon in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

The Governing Power of the Participle.

1. The Present Participle.

I conclude with a remark that applies equally to each of the three uses of the appositive participle: the present appositive participle with a direct object, no matter whether its use is adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate, is always in imitation of the Latin. For the Anglo-Saxon present participle, when used appositively, seems originally not to have had the power of governing a direct object in construction,—a fact not noticed hitherto so far as I am aware. This statement is substantiated, I believe, by the following considerations:—

1. Very few examples of a present participle having an object occur in Early West Saxon. Only eighteen examples
have been found in the works of Ælfric, distributed as follows: Bede 14, Gregory 2, Orosius 2.

2. With two exceptions each of these eighteen examples in Early West Saxon is a translation of a Latin appositive participle with a direct object. In one of the exceptional cases (Greg.¹ 171. 13: *lerende* (MS. C.: *beoð lerende*) = 126*: praedicando*) the Anglo-Saxon participle translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; in the other (Oros.¹ 52. 27) the accusative seems to belong to the finite verb as well as to the participle (see Statistics).

3. In hundreds of instances the Early West Saxon translators (Ælfric and his helpers) clearly avoided turning the Latin participle with an object by an Anglo-Saxon participle with an object (see chapter iv).

4. An object is exceedingly rare in the more original prose works, there being but four examples in the Chronicles, one in the *Laws*, and six in Wulfstan; in all eleven instances.

5. In every one of these eleven examples the participle can be traced directly or indirectly to a Latin source. In the *Chronicle*, *biddende* (1083 E), *cweðende*, which occurs twice (656 E, 675 E, both already quoted above), and *gesconde* (1087 E), may be due to the Latin *petens, dicens*, and *videat*, which latter occur so often in the Vulgate *New Testament*, in Gregory's *Cura Pastoralis*, in Bede's *Historia Ecclesiastica*, and in other books that we may assume to have been in the hands of the compiler of MS. E., especially as this MS. is itself occasionally interlarded with Latin. Or, since it was written about 1121 (Plummer, ii, § 26), the editor of E. could have borrowed these participles from the Anglo-Saxon *Gospels* or from the works of Ælfric, in both of which they abound. The single example in the *Laws* (Wibtr. C. 18: *Preost hine clænsie sylfes soð, in his halgum hrægel ætforan wiosode, ðus ece-sende: “Ueritatem dico in Christo, non mention”) may confidently be ascribed to Latin influence, not only that it is *ece-sende*, but that the participle is immediately followed by a quotation in Latin. As to Wulfstan, four of the examples
are cweðende (105. 30, 199. 15, 201. 8, 246. 11), which here as elsewhere is to be ascribed to Latin influence. *dicens (dicentes)* occurs five times in Wulfstan, though not in the above examples; twice it is translated by a co-ordinated finite (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), and twice it is not translated at all (31. 32, 77. 3). Moreover, in two instances (201. 8, 246. 11) cweðende immediately precedes a quotation in Latin. The other two examples in Wulfstan (244. 7b: gemende, 278. 9: sonejende; see Statistics) sound like translations from the ritual. Be this as it may, the participle may unhesitatingly be ascribed to Latin influence; for in Wulfstan there are interlarded with the Anglo-Saxon fourteen Latin present participles with an object.

6. Very few objects are found with the present participle in the poetry, only twenty-three in all, distributed as follows:

*Beowulf* four (1227: dream healdende; 2106: fela friegende (but K. Köhler considers *fela* an adverb); 2350: nearo neðende; 1829: see hetende, which may be substantival, as K. Köhler construes it), Cynewulf's *Christ* one (1271: *werp* winnende, Grein¹ and Gollancz¹ ²; *werp* winnende), *Andreas* three (570: dom agende, 491: mere hrerendum, mundum freorig, 300: wine *Searfende*), *Elene* two (1096: god hergendra, 1220: god hergendum), *Doomsday* one (112: deaS beaenigende tacen = signa minantia mortem), *Judith* one (272: mid toðon torn *Soligende*; cf. *Ps. 111. 9*: torn toðum Solian = dentibus fremere), *Daniel* two (355: *feorh* nerigende, 396: lean sellende), *Guthlac* one (1029: torn *Soliende*; cf. *Judith* 272), *Juliana* one (6: god hergendra; cf. *Elene* 1096, 1220), *Spirit of Men* one (82: *hygende hælo redes*, *Wonders of Creation* two (14: *friegende fira cynnes, 15: seegende searorum gespon*), *Metrical Psalms* four (104. 10: *cweðende = dicens*; 138. 17: *cweðende = dicitis*; 105. 17: hædenstyrces big *etendas = in similitudinem comedentis fœnum*; 105. 4: gemune us, drihten, on modsefan forS *hygende folces ðines = memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui). Of
these twenty-three participles, three (Doomsday 112, Metr. Ps. 104. 10 and 105. 17) are direct translations of corresponding Latin participles with an object; and to this class we may add a fourth (Metr. Ps. 138. 17), for the cweðende here, though corresponding to dicitis, must be due to diceus, which occurs not infrequently in the Latin Psalms. But what about the remaining nineteen examples? In the first place it is to be noticed that, except in four instances (Spirit of Men 82, Wonders of Creation 14 and 15, and Metr. Ps. 105. 4), the object immediately precedes its participle; that, though they are not so printed in Grein-Wülker, possibly we have accusative compounds (except in Beow. 1829), which compounds are in the main descriptive epithets, as are the hyphenated accusative compounds. And an object in an accusative compound seems to me to stand on an entirely different footing from an object in construction (cf. Strong, Logeman, Wheeler, p. 334, and Storch, p. 25). The accusative compound is often made because the Anglo-Saxon had no single word for the idea to be expressed, as when the translator of the Psalms (81. 2) turns the Latin peccator by syn-wyrcende, etc. Oftener, perhaps, the compound is made for the sake of its picturesqueness; hence it is more frequent in poetry than in prose. That the participles which govern an object in composition do stand by themselves and that their governing an object in composition does not necessarily imply an antecedent power of governing an object in construction is attested, I think, by the fact that only one or two of the participles with an object in composition are found, also, with an object in construction. This principle by itself might account for most of the participles under consideration. But we see, further, that of these participles eleven occur in works known to be translations from the Greek or the Latin (Andreas 3, Christ 1, Elene 2, Judith 1, Daniel 2, Guthlac 1, Juliana 1), and the participles here may be due in part to the influence of the participles in the originals, even if at times, as in the two examples from the Elene, the Anglo-Saxon participles correspond, not to
Latin participles, but to Latin finite verbs. It will be observed, also, that in these eleven examples there are only eight different participles, the participle of *hergian* occurring three times and that of *Solian* twice. As to the four participles with objects following in construction, I think that they must be ascribed to foreign influence, though I cannot definitely trace that influence in three of the examples, as I do not know the sources of the *Spirit of Men* and the *Wonders of Creation*. *Hygendede* of *Metr. Ps.* 105. 4 may safely be ascribed to the influence of the Latin participles of the *Psalter*, though none is found in the particular verse corresponding to this line.

7. An object is likewise rare in the other Germanic languages, especially in High German and in Old Saxon, as will be shown in chapter v.

8. The only fact known to me that seems to militate against the assumption that the present participle in Anglo-Saxon had not, originally, the power of governing an object, is this: in the *Prose Psalms* there are thirteen examples of the present participle with an object, no one of which is known to have a Latin appositive participle as its original correspondent. All of these participles occur in the Introductions to the *Psalms*. And, in his very able discussion of the *Paris Psalter* (p. 64 ff.), Bruce has shown that these Introductions are paraphrases of Latin originals, principally of the *argumenta* in the commentary *In Psalmorum Librum Exegesis*. In the originals as given by Bruce I find but two correspondences to our participles: in *Psalms* 34 *siofigende* corresponds to a substantive in the ablative with a genitive modifier (*David sang Æyne seower and Ærittigoðan salm, siofigende to Drihtne his yrméda = occasione cerunmarum suarum David hunc psalmum in tempore Jeremiae componit, etc.*), and in Ps. 38 to an ablative absolute (*David sang Æyne cahta and Ærittigoðan salm, seofigende to Drihtne, mid hu manegum unrotnessum he wæs ofdryced under Sawle = Angentibus sub Saule macroribus, hunc*).
psalmum cecinit etc.); while in the remaining eleven examples (37: andetende, 28: bebeodende, 33: gehatende, 39: gylpende (w. gen.), 32: herigende, 47: myciende, 37: seofigende: 43: seofigende, 32: Æanciende, 45: Æanciende, 31: wundriende (w. gen.)) there is no Latin correspondence. It will be observed, however, that, since one word is repeated four times (seofigende) and another twice (Æanciende), only seven words are involved; that, although there are no participles in the Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participles, participles are abundant in the Latin originals; that, as Bruce shows, the Prose Psalms are the work of an ecclesiastic; and that the Anglo-Saxon participles are those the Latin correspondents of which must have been often before the eyes and upon the lips of an ecclesiastic (such as confitens, postulans, benedicens, etc.). While, then, in the Prose Psalms the number of present participles with an object for which no immediate Latin source has been found, does seem to militate against the statement that originally in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the power of governing an object, in reality it does not: the author was an ecclesiastic and naturally molded his English translation on the pattern of what was at once his official language and his literary source.

9. In Late West Saxon, to be sure, especially in Ælfric and in the Gospels, there are numerous present participles with direct objects; but this fact does not invalidate the contention that in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the governing power originally. It will be observed, further, that in the Late West Saxon translations the participles with objects usually correspond to Latin participles with objects (25 times out of 36 in the Heptateuch, 117 times out of 122 in the Gospels, and 62 times out of 63 in Benet); and that in scores of instances the Latin participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a finite verb. The frequency of the participle with an object in Ælfric's Homilies and in his Lives of Saints is due, of course, to the fact that, as he tells us, these
works are translations from the Latin. The rareness of the present participle with an object in the poems and in the more original prose, especially in the late Wulfstan, would seem to indicate that, despite its great frequency in Ælfric and in the Gospels, this construction was never thoroughly naturalized in Anglo-Saxon.

10. Whenever it does govern an object, the present participle, as our examples show, has the same regimen as the verb from which it is derived. We find as object occasionally the genitive (Gregory 199. 4: wilnigende; Metr. Ps. 105. 4: hyegeonde; etc., etc.) and the dative (Bede 426. 30: biosmiendes; Ælf. Hom. II. 128b: sceowigende; etc., etc.), but usually the accusative (see Statistics).—In the preceding discussion as to the origin of the present participle with a direct object I have included not only the accusative, but all the cases that from the modern English standpoint appear to be direct objects and, in the Early West Saxon texts and in the poems, all participles with objects, whether direct or not.

2. The Preterite Participle.

1. With reference to the preterite participle, the word object, as stated in the prefatory note to the Statistics, is used to include not only the object in the ordinary sense, but also any noun modifier of the participle. We find with the preterite participle the object in the genitive (Ælf. L. S. xxiii. B. 442: alices fylstes bedæted; Beow. 845: niða ofercumen; Gen. 2344: geteled rimes; etc., etc.), the dative (Ælf. Hom. i. 544b3: deorum gefepelhte; ib. ii. 314b: beboda mannum gesette; Bede 172. 26: ðisse feðman Gode gehalgodre weorc; etc., etc.), and the instrumental (Bede 214. 11: onlysæd ðy lichoman; ib. 344. 28: ðy betstan leoðe geypelgæd; etc., etc.). This use of the preterite participle occurs both in the prose and in the poetry, but much more frequently in the latter. The construction seems to be thoroughly natural in Anglo-Saxon.
2. In the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, however, I have found but one instance of an appositive preterite participle governing an accusative of the direct object, namely, *Luke* 9. 55 (MSS. B. & C.): *hinе bewænd, he hiġ ȝreade = \textit{conversus} increpavit illos. The remaining three mss. and the corresponding Glosses here use a finite verb (see p. 225); and Professor Bright in his footnote to the above passage considers *bewænd* a slavish translation of the Latin participle. It is scarcely possible to consider as original a construction of which but one example is found in our texts. I believe, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon the past participle, when used appositively, did not have the power of governing a direct object.

I append tables showing the Latin correspondences of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participles, in their several uses, in the more definite Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin.
### Bede. 1

#### A.-S. Ptc. Without Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Ptc.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Latin Equivalent</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### A.-S. Ptc. With Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Ptc.</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Latin Equivalent</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Boethius. 1

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Ptc.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Latin Equivalent</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Ptc.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Ptc.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Orosius.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A.-S. Ptc.</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Notes:**

1. This is in the dative.
2. These are in the genitive.
THE APPPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

METRICAL PSALMS.

A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

BENEDICT.¹

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cond.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord.</td>
<td>Pres.......</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

¹
**HEPTATEUCH.**
A.-S. Ptc. without Object.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres....</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coord.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**LATIN EQUIVALENT.**

**THE GOSPELS.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adj.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>24</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>15</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fin.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>5</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>9</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coord.</td>
<td>Pres.....</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>45</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pret.....</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**LATIN EQUIVALENT.**
# METRES OF BOETHIUS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>14</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

# BENET.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Total</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>14</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
<td>15</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### PROSE PSALMS.¹

**A.-S. Ptc. with Object.**  
**Latin Equivalent.**  

**A.-S. Ptc. without Object.**  
**Latin Equivalent.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Adjp</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mod.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caus.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fint</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conc.</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conld</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co-ord</td>
<td>Pres.</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>11</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
CHAPTER IV.

THE ANGLO-SAXON RENDERING OF THE LATIN APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE.

When not turned by an appositive participle, the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon as follows:—

I. NORMALLY BY A CO-ORDINATED FINITE VERB.

Most frequently the Latin appositive participle is rendered in Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb, though the texts vary widely, as is evident from the table in the footnote.¹ That the co-ordinated finite verb is the most frequent rendering of the Latin appositive participle, while the subordinated finite verb is the commonest translation of the Latin absolute participle (see The Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., p. 36), is doubtless due to the fact that not a few of the Latin appositive participles have what we have denominated the "co-ordinate" use; and this rendition is, therefore, more appropriate for the appositive than for the absolute participle.

¹The proportion of co-ordinated to subordinated finite verbs is as follows:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Work</th>
<th>Co-ordinated to Subordinated Finite Verbs</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bede³</td>
<td>2.14:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benedict¹</td>
<td>1:1.97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Benefet⁴</td>
<td>1:2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genesis³</td>
<td>5.36:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gregory¹</td>
<td>1:1.56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matthew³</td>
<td>3:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poetical Psalms</td>
<td>1:1.88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prose Psalms</td>
<td>1:1.27</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The ratio of the total co-ordinated to the total subordinated finite verbs in these works is 1.35:1.
But it must be allowed that no principle has been consistently followed throughout by the Anglo-Saxon translators; and that not infrequently this rendition ignores shades of meaning in the original, and at times does positive violence to the sense. Undoubtedly, however, the modification of the sense of the original is often deliberately made by the translator because of his different conception of the relative importance of the ideas denoted by the Latin verb and the Latin participle.

The co-ordinated verb is usually in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative or the imperative. As a rule, the co-ordinated verb occurs in the same sentence as the verb with which it is co-ordinated, but occasionally it stands in an independent sentence. The clauses are generally united by a conjunction, but sometimes there is no connective.

A few examples will suffice to illustrate the range of the construction:—

(1) Co-ordinated Indicative: (a) With a verb in the same sentence: Bede\(^2\) 21. 9: *relinquens reuersus est* = 40. 1: *was forhutende* \(\sim\) hwearf; Greg.\(^2\) 62. 7: Hine per Isaiam Dominus admonet, *diecis* = 91. 19: *forðam myndgode* Dryhten *Saer Essaiam* \(\sim\) one witgan \(\sim\) eawæ; Mat. 12. 25: *sciens dixit = wiste* \(\sim\) eawæ; Gen.\(^2\) 22. 3: Abrahæm *consurgen* stravit etc. = A. *aras ... and ferde.—Other examples: Bede\(^2\) 98. 34 (122. 9), 100. 13 (124. 21); Greg.\(^2\) 24. 2 (45. 13), 76. 18, 21 (111. 6, 9); Gen. 42. 7, 9; Mat. 24. 2, 25. 18; etc., etc.—(b) With a verb in another sentence: Greg.\(^2\) 70. 17: Coram testamenti area Dominum consulit, exemplum ... *rectoribus probens* = 103. 6; fraegn *æs Dryhten beforen ære earec ... He ascelede on æne bisene; Gen. 42. 3; etc.

(2) Co-ordinated Optative: Greg.\(^2\) 394. 23: ne in semetipsis *torpentes opere alios excitent voce* = 461. 15: *ðylæs he oðre awexe mid his wordum, ð himself astlæige godra wæreca; Bede\(^2\) 112. 12, 13: *adueniens ... perfulauerit, qui ... ingrediens ... exierit* = 136. 1, 2: *Cume an spearwa,
... fleo ∧ cume ... ut gewite.—Other examples: *Bened.* 56. 2 (29. 6), 56. 8 (29. 12); 58. 16 (31. 11); *Mat.* 22. 24; etc.

(3) *Co-ordinated Imperative*: *Greg.* 150. 24, 25: Et vos domini eadem facite illis, remittentes minas, seintes quod et illorum et vester Dominus est in celis = 203. 1: Ge hlaefordas, doð ge eowrum monnum ðæt ile be hira andeaf & gemetgifæ ðone ðrean; geðenceð ðæt ægðer ge hira hlaeford ge eower is on hefenum.—Other examples: *Mat.* 5. 24, 9. 13, 10. 7; *Ps. Th.* 17. 48; etc.

II. **Frequently by a Subordinated Finite Verb.**

Almost as frequently as by a co-ordinated finite verb the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon subordinated finite verb, introduced by a conjunction that indicates the relation sustained by the Latin participle to the principal verb. The dependent verb in Anglo-Saxon is more commonly in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative; while at times the form of the verb is ambiguous. The use of the indicative or the optative rests upon the well-known distinction between these two moods, but the principle is not infrequently ignored. I cite examples of each mood. In the main, the examples are arranged according to the use of the appositive participle in Latin:—

1. *The Latin Temporal Clause* is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a temporal conjunction or conjunctional phrase: usually by ða, ða ða, ðonne; less frequently by after ðam ðe, after ðon ðæt, mid ðæt, of ðæt, siðdan, ðuna ðea, ðea, ðea, ðeño ðea, ða heile ðe. Examples:

   (1) *Indicative*:—ða: *Mat.* 27. 24:Uidens autem pilatus ... lavit manus = Da geseah p. ... ða ... he ðwoh his handa; *ib.* 8. 8; *Bede* 91. 5 (112. 2), 91. 30 (112. 26); *Greg.* 70. 23 (103. 11); *Gen.* 28. 18, 30. 9; etc.; ða ða: *Bede* 87. 4 (106. 24); *Greg.* 136. 5 (181. 17); *Gen.* 3. 8; etc.; ðonne: *Greg.* 8a (27. 17), 32. 15 (57. 2); *Ps. Th.* 21. 11; *Bened.* 152. 12 (85. 9); etc.; after ðam ðe: *Greg.* 216. 23
(287. 9); after quoniam: Bede\(^2\) 11. 25 (28. 7); mid by: Bede\(^2\) 84. 5 (102. 30); odoquoniam: Greg.\(^2\) 102. 23 (143. 17); suoquoniam: Greg.\(^2\) 78. 16 (113. 11), Bened.\(^2\) 132. 18 (70. 9); sona sua: Greg.\(^2\) 32. 17 (57. 6); swa swide swa: Greg.\(^2\) 68. 17 (99. 21); sa hvile sce: Greg.\(^2\) 344. 16 (421. 28.—(2) Optative: *sonne: Bened.\(^2\) 32. 11: Injuriam non facere, sed factam patienter sufferre = 17. 11: ac *sonne him mon yfel do, he sceal geSyldelice aræfian; Bede\(^2\) 83. 6 (100. 33); Greg.\(^2\) 222. 10 (403. 14); Mat.\(^2\) 6. 7; oquoniam: Bened.\(^2\) 202. 14 (131. 6); suoquoniam: Bened.\(^2\) 138. 14 (73. 9); sona swa: Bened.\(^2\) 138. 14 (73. 9); swa: Bened.\(^2\) 158. 11 (91. 13).

Note.—The Latin Co-ordinate Participle, though normally translated into Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb (see above, p. 321), is sometimes translated by a subordinated finite verb, which clause is temporal. Thus in Greg.\(^2\) 156. 3 (in-crepat, dicens = 207. 14 tælde, *sa he cwceft) we have as the translation of *dicens the dependent *sa he cwceft instead of the more common independent and he cwceft (Greg.\(^2\) 98. 16 (137. 16), etc.). I have noted about thirty examples of *dicens = *sa he cwceft in Greg.\(^2\) and about forty examples of *dicens = and he cwceft. Besides, the Anglo-Saxon dependent temporal clause is substituted for other co-ordinate participles of the Latin.

2. The Latin Relative Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun. Examples:—(1) Indicative: Bened.\(^2\) 72. 14: Lectiones ad ipsum deum pertinentes dicantur = 39. 9: redinga syn gesungene, *se to *sam freolsdæge belimpæð; ib. 2. 6, 8 (1. 7, 9); Greg.\(^2\) 18*2 (37. 22); Bede\(^2\) 92. 8 (114. 6), 94. 28 (118. 12); Gen. 23. 17; Mat. 22. 11, 25. 29, 25. 34; Ps. Th.\(^2\) 3. 6; etc., etc.—(2) Optative: Bened.\(^2\) 44. 8: Scurrilitates vero vel verba otiosa et visum moveantia, eterna clausura in omnibus locis damnamus = 22. 5: gegafspræce and idele word and *sa word, *se leahter astyrion . . . we . . . forbeodes; Greg.\(^2\) 126. 26 (173. 8); Bede\(^2\) 57. 17 (80. 25).
3. The Latin Causal Clause is rendered by a subordinated finite verb introduced by forðan, forðam &c, forðon, forðon &c, mid &c. Examples:—(1) Indicative: forðan: Greg.\(^2\) 50. 14: ad exemplum aliis constat = 77. 13: forðan he bið gesett to bisene oðrum monnum: Ps. Th. 18. 7;—forðon: Greg.\(^2\) 52. 9 (79. 10); Bede\(^2\) 6. 9 (2. 19); forðam &c: Greg.\(^2\) 210. 1 (276. 15 Cot.), ib. 232. 12 (305. 2); Bede\(^2\) 116. 3 (142. 1); for &c: Greg. 2 210. 1 (276. 15 Cot.), ib. 232. 12 (305. 2); Bede\(^2\) 12. 13 (28. 18) (or Temporal?).

4. The Latin Conditional Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by gif. Examples:—(1) Indicative: Greg.\(^2\) 44. 6: Pupilla namque oculi ... albuginem tolemin nil videt = 69. 18: gif hine done &c fleah mid ealle &c gefylled mid broce & mid iernsum. (2) Optative: gif hiene mon nide; ib. 42. 18 (67. 23); Ps. Th.\(^2\) 3. 5; Seah &c: Greg.\(^2\) 68. 7 (99. 9), Bede\(^2\) 57. 29 (82. 4), 272. 28 (368. 16).

5. The Latin Concessive Clause is turned by a subordinated finite verb introduced by &c, &c. Examples:—(1) Indicative: &c: Greg.\(^2\) 192. 3: non levabo caput, saturatus afflictione et miseria = 253. 8: ... &c eon gefylled mid broce & mid iernsum.—(2) Optative: &c: Greg.\(^2\) 34. 19: co-actus = 59. 10: &c hiene mon nide; ib. 42. 18 (67. 23); Ps. Th.\(^2\) 3. 5; &c: Greg.\(^2\) 68. 7 (99. 9), Bede\(^2\) 57. 29 (82. 4), 272. 28 (368. 16).

6. The Latin Final Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by to &c, to &c, to &c, &c. Examples:—(1) Indicative: I find no example.—(2) Optative: &c: Mat.\(^2\) 14. 15: dimitte turbas, ut evades in castella emant sibi escas = forlæt &c manego &c hi faron ... &c him mete biecgean; Greg.\(^2\) 122. 19 (167. 17); to &c: Greg.\(^2\) 246. 20 (319. 20); to &c: Bede\(^2\) 204. 15 (132. 15); &c: Mat.\(^2\) 13. 29; &c: Gen.\(^2\) 32. 11; &c: Greg.\(^2\) 90. 2, 4 (127. 14, 15), 180. 13 (239. 2).
7. The Latin Modal Clause is turned by a subordinate finite verb introduced by sua sua, suelee. Examples:—
(1) Indicative: sua sua: Greg.² 348. 14: ut qui voluptatibus delectali discissimus, fletibus amariati redeamus = 425. 14: dètte us biterige sio hreowsung, sua sua us ær sweetedon ða synna; Mat.² 9. 36; etc., etc.—(2) Optative: suelee: Greg.² 156. 6: quasi compatiens = 207. 17: suelee he efluside him bare; ib. 80. 22 (117. 1), 94. 30 (135. 1); Bened.² 180. 6 (113. 25).

8. The Latin Consecutive Clause is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by sua sæt, sæt, sætelle. Examples:—(1) Indicative: sua sæt: Mat.² 13. 2: congregate sunt ad eum turbæ multæ, ita ut in navicum adscendens sedet = mydale mænigeo weron gesammade to him sua sæt he code on scyp ðà sæt sæt; Bede² 278. 11, 12 (378. 20, 21); sæt: Bede² 116. 4 (142. 2); Bened.² 188. 15 (124. 5); sætelle: Greg.² 182. 7 (241. 3)—(2) Optative: sæt: Greg.² 34. 21: caveat ne acceptam pecuniam in sudarium ligans de ejus occultatione judicetur = 59. 13: healde hine sæt he ne engle sæt underfongne feoh on ðæm swatline; ib. 38. 14 (63. 15), 398. 20 (463. 13); sætelle: Greg.² 164. 23 (219. 7); sua sæt: Bened.² 12. 4 (5. 24).

III. By a Prepositional Phrase.

Not infrequently the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a prepositional phrase.

(1) The phrase denotes Manner, Means, or Instrumentality, and is introduced by mid, in, særh. Examples:—mid: Bened.² 52. 19: subsequuntur gaudentes et dicentes = 27. 11: særh afterfylgendlice mid blisse clypla; ib. 104. 9: adjustus = 55. 16: mid heora fultume; Greg.² 274. 1: iratus = 353. 20: mid his icere; in: Bede² 239. 18: Cristus incarnatus = 310. 26: Crist in menniscum lichoman; særh: Bened.² 178. 15: admonitus = 113. 13: særh wyngange.
(2) The phrase denotes Time, and is introduced by after, be, on, under. Examples:—after: Bede\textsuperscript{2} 110. 23: cedem perempto = 132. 14: after his slepe; on: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 88. 12: dormientes = 47. 11: on slcepe; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 218. 15 = 289. 10; under: Bede\textsuperscript{2} 114. 26: athali = 140. 4: under crisman (or Modal?).

(3) The phrase denotes Cause, and is introduced by for. Examples:—Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 96. 20: excommunicatus = 52. 5: for amansunge; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 28. 12 (51. 14); Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 68. 18: miseratus = 99. 22: for mildheortnesse; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 124. 5: supernse formi dinis et dilectionis spiritu afflatus = 169. 3: for Godes ljum \(\dagger\) for Godes ege; Bede\textsuperscript{2} 32. 30: fame confecti = 54. 2: for hungre; Gen. 19. 29: Deus recordatus Abrahamse liberavit Lot = alysde L. for Abrahame; Gen. 45. 3: nimio terrore perterriti = for ege.

(4) The phrase denotes Condition and is introduced by butan: Mat.\textsuperscript{2} 22. 25: non habens semen = butan bearne.

IV. By a Verb in the Infinitive Mood.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is translated by an infinitive. Examples:—(1) The Uninflected Infinitive: (a) Without a subject: Bened.\textsuperscript{2} 10. 13: Et si fugientes gehemen poenas ad vitam volunmans pervenire perpetnam = 5. 5: And gif he hellewites susl \(\dagger\) or to ecum life euman; Bede\textsuperscript{2} 99. 25: nerbis delectatus promisit = 122. 33: Da ongon he lustfullian \(\dagger\) his bishops wordum and geheht; etc.; (b) With a subject: Bede\textsuperscript{2} 46. 5: ad iussionem regis residentes \(\ldots\) prae dicarent = 58. 28: Da het se cyning hie sittan \(\ldots\) and hie \(\ldots\) bodedon; Mat.\textsuperscript{2} 27. 26.—(2) The Inflected Infinitive: Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 178. 25: ita nonnunquam quibusdam audita vera nocuerunt = 237. 11: sua dere\(\dagger\) eac hwilum sumnum monnum \(\dagger\) set so\(\dagger\) to gehierenne; Greg.\textsuperscript{2} 300. 15: ut cum \(\ldots\) tune quasi a nobismetipsis foras etiam alios instruentes excamus = 385. 9: Ac eft Sonne \(\ldots\) Sonne bio we of \(\dagger\)ere ceastre ut afserene, \(\dagger\)et is of urum agnum ingedonne, \(\dagger\)ere
men to heranne; Bede² 8. 10: omnes ad quos haec eadem historia peruenire poterit ... legentes sine audientes suppliciter precor, ut = 486. 8: ic caenmodlice bidde ... sætte to cællum ðe ðis ylce stær to becyme ... to reæanne ðæt to gehyranne ðæt, etc.; Bede² 54. 24: si ... actura gratias intrat = 76. 12: ðæh ðe heo ... Gode Doncunge to donne ... gange; Ps. Th.² 9. 12.

V. BY AN ATTRIBUTIVE PARTICIPLE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon attributive participle. Examples:—Bened.² 24. 13: ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi commissi non patiatur = 14. 8: ðæt he him ðæs befesten cowdes namne æfwirð-lan næbbe; ib. 92. 14 (49. 18), 146. 11 (78. 10); Greg.² 22. 12 (43. 14), 126. 7 (171. 11); Mat. 17. 14.

VI. BY AN ABSOLUTE PARTICIPLE.

Rarely the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon absolute participle. Examples:—Mat.² 13. 1: In illo die exiens Jesus de domo, sedebat seceus mare = On ðam dæge ðam haldende ut-gangendum of huse he sæt wið ða sæ; Mk.² 5. 2, 16. 12; Mat.² 17. 14; Lk.² 1. 63, 17. 7; Oros.² 33. 29 (34. 1). (See Abs. Ptc. in A.-S., pp. 8, 13.)

VII. BY AN ADVERB.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is turned by an adverb. Examples:—Greg.² 360. 18: Hinc iterum iratus dicit = 435. 11: he cwæð eft iernenga; Greg.² 402. 18, 21: cautus ... sollicitus = 467. 1, 3: wærlice ... geornlice; Ps. Th.² 16. 10: projicientes = forsevenlice.

VIII. BY AN ADJECTIVE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon adjective. Examples:—Bede² 108. 32: scio...
que ventura tibi in proximo mala formidas = 128. 25: ic wat
... hwyle toward yfel ȝu ȝe in neahnesse forhtast; Bede²
82. 5: adlatus est quidam ... oculorum luce privatus = 100.
3: ȝa lædde mon forð sumne blindne mon; Mat.² 8. 16:
multos daemonia habentes = mange deofol-seoce.

IX. By a Substantive.

Rarely a Latin appositive participle is represented in Anglo-
Saxon by a substantive. Examples:—Bened.² 116. 7: Mensis
fratrum edentium lectio deesse non debet = 62. 3: Gebroðra
gereorde æt hyra mysum ne seal beon butan rædinge; Greg.²
160. 16, 17: Egit . . . doctor, ut prius audirent laudati, quod
recognoscerent, et postmodum, quod cohortati sequerentur =
213. 20. 21: Sua gedyde se . . . læcow ȝet hie æresð gehier-
don ȝa heringe ȝe him licode forðem ȝet hie æfter ȝeem ȝe
luseðlicor gehierden ȝa lære.
CHAPTER V.

THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN THE OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES.

I.

In the main, the uses of the appositive participle in the other Germanic Languages tally with those found in Anglo-Saxon. My discussion must be brief not only because of the want of space but also because of the lack of a comprehensive treatment of the appositive participle in these languages. But the treatises of Douse and of Gering answer admirably for Gothic; those of Falk and Torp, of Lund, and of Nygaard for the Scandinavian languages; those of Dietz, O. Erdmann, K. Förster, Mourek, Rannow, Seedorf, Seiler, and Wunderlich, for Old High German; that of Barz for Middle High German; and those of Behaghel and Pratje for Old Saxon. Mourek, Pratje, and Rannow do not classify their examples according to use. Perhaps it is not improper to state that, while this chapter is based on the statistics of others, the interpretation thereof is my own.

1. Gothic.

In the Introduction I have already commented on the unwisdom of Gering's excluding the adjectival (relative) participle from the appositive use. Ignoring this, we find the appositive participle freely used adjectivally, adverbially, and co-ordinately (though Gering does not use the last term). As Lücke has shown with reference to the absolute participle, so it is with the appositive participle: Ulfilas was a slavish translator; and his usage represents, I believe, the genius
of the classical (especially Greek) and not of the Germanic languages (see II. below). But at times even Ulphilas turns the Greek appositive participle by a finite verb, Gering (p. 313 ff., 399 ff.) giving not a few examples of the same (over fifty subordinate and twenty-five co-ordinate verbs); whereas the turning of a Greek finite verb by a Gothic appositive participle is very rare (four * examples, according to Gering, p. 401).

I append a few examples from Gering: I. Adjectival (Relative) (Gering's attributive): Mat. 8. 9: Jah ank ik manna im habands uf waldaujua meinamanna gaddruihins = Kai γὰρ ἐξ ἀνθρωπὸς εἰμὶ . . . ἔχων ὑπ' ἐμαυτὸν στρατιῶτας; L. 2. 13: managei harjis himinakunlis, hazjandane gaf jah qipandane = Πλήθος στρατιῶτας οὐρανίων αἰνοῦντων τῶν θεῶν καὶ λεγόντων: II. Adverbial: Mat. 27. 63: qaf nauh libands = εἶπεν ἐπὶ ζῷν (temporal); Mk. 6. 20: Herodis ohta sis Iohannen, kumands ina wair garaihtana jah weihana = Ἡρώδης ἐφοβεῖτο τῶν Ἰωάννην, εἶδος αὐτὸν ἀνδρὰ δίκαιον καὶ ἄγιον (causal); J. 6. 6: patuh pan qaf fraisands ina = Τότε δὲ ἐλεγεν πειράζων αὐτὸν (final); Mat. 6. 17: ἔφη μν fastands salbo hanbih pein = Σὺ δὲ νηστείων ἀλειφάι σου τὴν κεφαλήν (conditional according to Gering, but may be temporal); Lk. 2. 48: sa atta peins jah ik vinnundona sokidedum puk = ὁ Πατήρ σου καὶ ὁ δυνάμενος εἰς τούτοις (modal: manner); Mk. 6. 5: siukaim handuns gahajands gahailida = ἀρρώστοις ἐπιθεὶς τὰς χείρας ἐθεράπευσεν (modal: means, Gering's instrumental); J. 7. 15: hwaiwa sa bokos kann unshhuwa? = Ἡ γὰρ ὁ ὄστος γράμματα οἶδεν μὴ μεμαθηκώς (concessive, Gering's limitative); III. Co-ordinate (not treated by Gering as such): Mat. 6. 31: Ni mauammaq nu qipandans = Mὴ οὖν μεριμνήσετε λέγοντες; Mk. 9. 12: ἦπ εἰς andhaf-jands qaf du im = ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς.

*But since, in making this statement, Gering limits himself to the adverbial uses of the appositive participle, there must be more than four examples in all. I have myself found about this number in Mark.
2. The Scandinavian Languages.

According to the statements of Lund, of Falk and Torp, and of Nygaard, the appositive participle has had the same history in the Scandinavian languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

As Lund's Oldnordisk Ordfojningslære * is out of print, it is best, perhaps, to quote in full what he has to say of the appositive use of the participle in Old Norse, together with his examples (§ 149): "Tillegsförmennerne, iser den handlende, føjes (som hosstillet) til et navnecd i sætningen for at betegne en med hovedhandlingen samtidig (eller fortidig) handling eller tilstand, der står således i forbindelse med hovedhandlingen, at den ikke alene kan bestemme dens tidsforhold, men også dens måde og andre omstændigheder, som grund, anledning, betingelse, modsætning osv., hvilke forhold almindelig ellers (som på Dansk) udtrykkes ved bisætninger (med bindemord eller henforende udtryk) eller ved en forholdsordssætning. Skønt denne brug ikke er meget almindelig (som i Græsk og Latin), tjener den dog ikke sjælden til at give talen korthed og bøjelighed, da tillegsförmennerne på denne måde kunne føjes ikke alene til sætningens grundord, men også til genstanden, hensynet og andre led deri." Then follow his examples:

Hlæjandi Völundr hófsk at lofti, grätandi Böðvildr gęk or eyju. Völnundarke. 27.—(Hann) havde tekít lax or forsinum ok át blundandi. Sn. Edd. 72.—Or hans siðu sofanda tók guð eitt ríf ok fylldi rúm rífins með holdi. Gisl. 44, 66.—Sá sem norrænaði, kennandi sinn fátaekdom ok vanfæri tók þetta verk upp á sik af bøðskap ok fórsög fyrri ságs víðurs liga herra. Stjórn 2.—Sá er kaupir vis vitandi (sciens, med sit vidende, således at han ved) Grág. r., 15.—Hún drottningin þetta sjandi (hoc videns, ved at se dette) fylldist spáleiksanda ok melti svá. Biskupa S. 217.—At fengnum andsvörum spurðra luta ok offraðu miklu fē. Alex. 51.—Drukku jarlar

*For the loan of this book I am indebted to Professor James Morgan Hart, who also kindly called my attention to the work of Falk and Torp.
öl begiandi (tiende s: uden at råbe dertil), en øpanda ølker stóð. _Hervar._ 41.—In the next paragraph (§ 150) Lund discusses the attributive use of the participle; and some of the examples there given would come under our “adjectival” use of the appositive participle.

In their recent work, _Dansk-Norskens Syntax i Historisk Fremstilling_, Falk and Torp briefly treat the appositive use of the participle not only in Old Norse but also in the modern Scandinavian languages. Their statement is an admirable supplement to that of Lund, and is worthy of quotation (§ 67. 3): “Apposition af participier forholder sig væsentlig som adjektivernes. Ved præsens particip forekommer appositiv brug i oldnorsk kun i hæld stil: _hon misgørði etandi af tresíns ávæxi; taloði já fyrir sínun mónnum svá mælandi_. Endnu er udtryk som: jeg gik igang med arbeidet stolende paa hans loft; trodsende alle hindringer trængte han frem, fremmede for den ægte folkelige udtrykksmaade. Den ældre kancelli-til yndede saadan vendinger: paa eet andhet stedt talindis om bandt siger han saa (P. Elies.); T. gick vd emod dennes berendis hostiam (Abs. Ped.); andre breflie lydendis at (St. D. Pr.); jeg befæler dig Gud ønskendis dig ald lyk-salighed (Punt.); befælendiss dig hermed gud og himmelen (Chr. VI.). Ved fortidsparticipe findes appositiv brug i oldnorsk klassik prosa kun i et parenkle udtryk: _på tågø þar fyrir Daniër konnir ór leiðsögri_. I hende skrifter forekommer ogsaa foranstillet apposition: _utgenginn af skóla heldr hann sið nú upp á leið-manna hútt; ór siðu valdi kastadr dó hann i myrkvastofu_. Endnu er forbindelser som: forladt af alle døde han i ensomhed; opbragt herover ponsede han paa hævn, ganske uhjemlige og fremmede for godt landsmaal. Uden anstod er derimod den efterstillede apposition i udtryk som: Gud sendte sín son, födt af en kvinde; til en by, kaldet Ephrem. I den ældre kunstige stil paattræffes vendinger som: rigdom ther ijde brughet giffer orsage till alwerdsins homödt (P. Elies.); æalije, ther mange mennesker smwrede met worde karseke (ib.)._ Sml. § 139, 1.” The section cited runs:
“Appositivt particip til betegnelse af den en hovedsætning underordnede handling, erstattende en relativ, tids- eller aarsagsætning, er i det hele og store en fremmed brug i nordisk: se § 67, 3. I vort skriftsprog er denne udtryksmaade ikke sjelden: han gik bort, ponsende paa hævn; ankommen til byen, gik han straks ned til havnen. I dagligtalen anvendes den aldrig. Anderledes hvor participiet betegner subjektets tilstand under handlingen. Her fungerer det som adjektiv, idet dette kan anvendes paa samme maade: Guðrún grálandi gakk ór láti; han gik slagen derfra (sml. han gik glad bort); se § 68, 2 b.”

Nygaard considers that the use of the participle in Norse prose is largely due to Latin influence. As I have not had access to his article on Den Lærde Stil i den Nòrrøne Prosa, I quote the summary of the Berlin Jahresbericht for 1896: “Der gelehrte stil zeigt sich in der nordischen prosa: 1. in der erweiterung des gebrauchs des part. præsens, das in volkstümlichen stile nicht allzu häufung angewendet wird. Auf dem gebrauch dieses part. hat im geleherten stil das lat. part. præsens und das gerundium eingewirkt. 2. Auch der gebrauch des part. præt. ist in dem gelehnten stil wesentlich erweitert. Namentlich wird das part. præt. häufung mit præositionen (at, eptir) verbunden; wir haben hier eine konstruktion, die dem lat. abl. absolut. entspricht.”

3. **High German.**

(1) Old High German.

I have been surprised to find how closely the uses of the appositive participle in Old High German correspond to those in Anglo-Saxon. True, Tatian has no Anglo-Saxon counterpart, for he is as slavish in following his original as is Ulfilas; and has hundreds of examples of the un-Germanic co-ordinate participle. But the more original Otfrid and Isidor are quite different. In Otfrid and Notker the modal participle was
so common that it developed an adverbial ending in -o (O. Erdmann, Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, p. 219), as in Otfrid, iv., 12. 53: er fluor ilonto; v., 9. 14: ir get sus drurento. The modal use is found, too, in Isidor. In Isidor and in Otfrid, again, the adjectival use of the preterite participle is common, while that of the present is comparatively rare, being limited as in Anglo-Saxon to participles with slight verbal power. The other uses are rare in both writers. Isidor, for instance, has only four examples of the co-ordinate participle, all from quedan; two are in direct translation of the Latin diecus, and we may add also the other two, though diecus does not occur in these two passages. But eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin co-ordinate participle by a finite verb (nine co-ordinated and nine subordinated). Clearly, then, if Isidor and Otfrid are true types, the co-ordinate participle was as unnatural in Old High German as in Anglo-Saxon. In the Benediktinerregel, finally, the present participle often answers to a Latin gerund in the ablative (Seiler, p. 470).

Examples: (1) Adjectival (Relative):—Tatian, 88. 2: Uuas sum man dar drizog inti ahito iar habenti in sinero unmahti = Erat autem quidam homo ibi triginta octo annos habens in infirmitate sua; Otfrid, iii., 20. 1: gisah einan man, blintan giboranan; Tatian, 107. 1: Inti uinas sum arm betalari gimen-nit Lazarus = Et erat quidam mendicus nomine Lazarus; (2) Adverbial:—Otfrid, i., 17. 73: sie wurtun slafente fon engilon gimanote (temporal); Tatian, 192. 2: Inti nohden andrun bismaronti quadun in inan = Et alia multa blasphemantes dice-bant in eum (modal: manner); Tatian, 12. 3: inti inan ni findanti fueran uiidar zi Hierusalem inan suochenti (causal and final); Otfrid, v., 12. 26: er ingiang ungimerrit, duron so bisperrit (concessive); Otfrid, i., 8. 6: thiu racha, sus gidan, nam thes huara thauna wan (conditional); (3) Co-ordinate:—Otfrid, i., 13. 18: barg thiw wort, in herzen ahonti; Tatian, 6. 6: Maria uarlihlo gihiel alnu thisiu unort ahonti in ira herzen = M. autem conservabat omnia verba haces conferens in corde suo; Tatian, 54. 6: antevwteni quad zi in = re-
MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

spondens dixit ad illos; Tatian, 81. 2: sprah in quedenti = locutus est eis dicevs.

(2) Middle High German.

The story is the same in Middle High German, if we may take Barz’s * statistics of the Nibelungenlied and Iwein as true for Middle High German in general. Here the adverbial participle denoting manner is very common, and we meet with sorgende, svigende, unwizzende, etc., as in Anglo-Saxon. But the adverbial participle denoting means is practically unknown, and the other uses of the adverbial appositive participle are rare. Those cited as temporal and as final occur in close connection with verbs of motion, and waver between predicative and adverbial uses. The adjectival (relative) use is almost exclusively confined to the preterite participle. The co-ordinate use is not known.

Examples from Barz:—(1) Adjectival (Relative): Nib. 2. 3: ein vil edel magedin, daz . . . sin, Kriemhilt geheizen; Nib. 833. 2: die truogen liechte pfelle . . ., geworht in Arabin; (2) Adverbial: Nib. 1065. 1: vil lute seriende daz liut gie mit im dan (temporal); Nib. 2333. 3: ez giengen inuer helde zuo disem gademe gewqfent wol ze vlize (temporal); Nib. 502. 3: sorgende† walte er (modal: manner); Iw. 3227: er stal sich svigende† dan (modal); Iw. 6113: daz ist unwizzende† geschehen (modal); Iw. 531: daz ich suochende rite einen man (final); ib. Iw. 4163, 5775.

(3) New High German.

The fullest recent treatment accessible to me of the appositive participle in New High German is that by von Jagemann in his Elements of German Syntax; of which this section of

*Paul does not treat the construction.
†Barz (p. 22) puts this under Adverbialer Gebrauch des Participiums, not Appositiver Gebrauch.
my paper is scarcely more than a summary. In § 124, 4a, he gives the three following examples of the appositive participle in New High German: "She sat weeping by the bedside of her mother = Sie sass weinend am Bette ihrer mutter; He entered the room in silence = Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer; Pierced by an arrow he sank to the ground = Von einem Pfeile getroffen sank er zu Boden." To me, however, the participle in the first example appears to be used predicatively. The remaining two are appositive, the former denoting manner and the latter cause. In § 125, notwithstanding, we are told: "Present participles should not be used in German to express adverbial relations of time, cause, or manner."* I do not know how to reconcile the italicized part of this statement with example two above, unless for the moment Professor von Jagemann had in mind the statement made in § 124, 3c: "A limited number of present participles are no longer felt as such, but as common adjectives, and they may therefore be used predicatively and adverbially*: He is absent = Er ist abwesend; She sang charmingly = Sie sang reizend;" and thought that he had put Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer under § 124, 3c instead of § 124, 4a. Be this as it may, his statement that the present participle may be used adverbially is in strict keeping with the tradition not only of High German, but also of the Germanic languages in general, so far as it is used to denote manner. The non-use of the present participle to denote time and cause is what our preceding investigation has led us to expect.

Again, we learn that the "adjectival" use of the present appositive participle is not allowed (§ 124, 4b): "This [i.e., the appositive] use of a participle, however, is not permitted in the numerous cases in which an important limitation of a noun is to be expressed. The participle should then be used attributively, before the noun, preceded by its own qualifiers

*The italics are mine.
(see § 231, 2); or else a relative clause should be substituted: The book lying on the table was a Greek Grammar = Das auf dem Tische liegende Buch war eine griechische Grammatik, or Das Buch, das auf dem Tische lag etc.; The candidate receiving the largest number of votes is elected = Der die meisten Stimmen erhaltende Candidat (or derjenige Candidat, welcher die meisten Stimmen erhält,) ist erwählt; I prefer an edition of Molière’s works printed in France = Ich ziehe eine in Frankreich gedruckte Ausgabe von Molière’s Werken (or eine Ausgabe von ... die in Frankreich gedruckt ist,) vor.”

Finally, we are told that the “co-ordinate” use of the present participle is not common (§ 124, 4c): “A present participle should not, ordinarily, be used to express an idea as important as, or more important than, that expressed by the finite verb, but a co-ordinate verb should be used instead of the participle: He sat at his desk all day, writing letters = Er sass den ganzen Tag an seinem Pulte und schrieb Briefe; He stood on the mountain, looking down into the valley = Er stand auf dem Berge und sah ins Thal hinunter.” This usage is in strict accord with that of Early West Saxon.

No specific statement is made as to the governing power of the present participle when used appositively. But, from § 124, 4b<sup>c</sup> above quoted, we learn that the present appositive participle seldom governs an object in New High German, the participle with an object usually being attributive.

As to the past participle, von Jagemann has this to say (§ 126): “Although past participles are more frequently used in German to express adverbial relations than present participles, yet they cannot be used with the same freedom as in English, and it will often seem best to make substitutions for them similar to those just indicated for present participles.”

4. Old Saxon.

In Old Saxon (cf. Behaghel, and Pratje, §§ 156, 159) we again meet with the adverbial participle denoting manner
(sorgondi, gornondi, greotandi, etc.), but not means. The only instances of the temporal participle are with stapandi and libbiandi. The other adverbial uses are unrepresented (cf. Behaghel, § 300). The adjectival (relative) use is commoner with the preterite than with the present. The co-ordinate participle is unknown; for the participles cited by Behaghel in § 300, B., are either predicative or modal.

Examples (all from the Heliand as given by Pratje):—(1) Adjectival (relative): 3391: huo ik hier brinnandi thrannere tholon; 2776: that man iro Johannes . . . hobid gari alosit fan is lichamen; (2) Adverbial: Temporal: 1013: that gi so libbecandi thena landes uuard selvon gisahon; 701: sagda im an suefna stapandion on naht;—modal: 4588: thu no bigher erlo gihuilic te odrero . . . sorgondi gisohan; 4071: griot gornondi; 2996: gruotta ina greotandi; etc. Pratje (§ 155. 2) considers uuillaadi an adverb in 1965: thoh hie . . . manno huilicon uuillaandi forgere uuatares drincan.

II.

Despite the professed incompleteness of the preceding presentation of the uses of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English, I believe it warrants us in drawing certain general conclusions concerning the origin of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages, as follows:—

1. The adverbial participle denoting manner and the adjectival (relative) past participle are most probably native to the Germanic languages. Perhaps, too, the adjectival and the temporal uses with words like be, live, and sleep are native.

2. All other uses of the appositive participle, whether present or past, are probably of Greek or Latin origin.

3. That the appositive use of the present participle having an object is derived from the Greek and the Latin is highly probable. True, the appositive participle in Ulfilas and in Tatian governs an object with extraordinary frequency; but
I believe that a comparison of the examples with the originals would show that in almost every case the construction is in direct imitation of the Greek and the Latin. Neither Gering nor Mourek cites all the examples of the participle with an object; Mourek does not give the Latin original along with the Old High German; and I have not made an exhaustive comparison in either case. But the slight study I have given forces me to the above conclusion. I find, for instance, that out of 151 present participles with a direct object in the Gothic Mark 139 correspond to Greek participles with objects; and that in most of the twelve exceptional cases the participle translates a Greek participle elsewhere in Mark. Mourek cites 140 examples of quedenti in Tatian; and, on turning to the Latin, I find that in 137 of these instances the Old High German participle is a direct translation of diceus. More than this, not a few of the Greek participles with an object that are cited by Gering (pp. 313 ff., 399 ff.) are turned by a finite verb, whereas the whole number of Greek verbs turned by Gothic participles is very small. In the more original Old High German texts, a present participle with an object is almost unknown. Of the appositive participles (present) cited from Otfrid by Erdmann only three have an object (singenti, r. 12. 22; hel-senti, r. 11. 46; erent, r. 5. 50). With the present appositive participles cited from Isidor by Rannow, an object occurs only four times, each time the participle of the verb quedan; in two of these instances in direct translation of the Latin diceus, and in the other two without any corresponding participle in the Latin. More than this, eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin participle having an object by a finite verb (co-ordinated nine and subordinated nine), nine of these being forms of diceus.—In Middle High German, too, an object is seldom found. Barz cites only three examples from Iwein and the Nibelungenlied (Nib. 2292: gie Wulfrat . . . howwende die Guntheres man; Iv. 531: daz ich swochende rite einen man; Iv. 4163: die reit ich swochende), and these are in connection
THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON. 341

with a verb of motion, and waver between the predicative and the appositive use.—The comparative infrequency of the present participle with an object in New High German is known to all.—As for Old Saxon, not one of the genuine appositive participles cited by Pratje has an object.

III.

The other Germanic languages employed about the same substitutes for the Greek and Latin appositive participle as did Anglo-Saxon; hence this topic may be treated with great brevity.

1. The Co-ordinated Finite Verb.

Of the co-ordinated finite verb, Gering (p. 399 f.) cites about twenty-five examples from Ulphilas, such as Mk. 5. 41: κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ παιδίου λέγει = jairgraip bi handau þata barn gafslahh; J. 18. 22: εὐδοκεῖν ῥάπτεσμα . . . εἶπιόν = gaf slah . . . gafslahh; etc.—This translation is common in Old High German, also, ten examples occurring in Isidor (Rannow, p. 99 f.): 39. 26: etiam locus ipse coruscans miraculis . . . ad se omnem contrahat mundum = ioh auh dhin selba stat chisheinit . . . ioh zi imu chidhinsit allan mittingart; 4. 33: respondens . . . ait = antuorra . . . quad; etc.

2. The Subordinated Finite Verb.

For the dependent clause as a translation of the Greek and Latin appositive participle in the other Germanic languages, see Gering, p. 395 ff.; Rannow, p. 100.

As to Gothic, Gering gives but two or three examples of this locution in his treatment of the appositive participle (J. 13. 30: λαβὼν . . . ἐξῆλθεν = bipe andnam þana hlaibjauns, suns galaiþ ut; Philip. 1. 27); but, as already stated, Gering limits the term appositive to the "adverbial" uses of the participle, and excludes therefrom the "adjectival," unwisely considering all the latter "attributive." Many of his attributive parti-
ciples are, according to our definition, appositive; and in not a few of these examples, as Gering states (p. 313), the Greek participle is translated by a Gothic subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun, as in: Mat. 6. 4, 6. 18: οὐ ταντίρω σου ὁ βλέπων εὲν πάρα κρυπτῷ = atta þeins sæi saihwif in fullm-sja; Eph. 1. 3: θεὸς ... ὁ ἐυλογήσας ἡμᾶς = guþ ... izei gaphinipida uns; etc., etc. (about fifty examples in all). More-over, as Gering tells us (p. 317 ff.), the Greek substantivized participle is often turned by a Gothic dependent clause. In reality, then, the translation of a Greek appositive participle (especially in its adjectival use) by a subordinated finite verb is very common in Gothic.

In Old High German, also, the dependent finite verb often translates a Latin appositive participle. Rannow (p. 100) cites ten examples from Isidor; of which I quote two only: 19. 14: secumdum Moysi sententiam diecenis = after Moyses quhidim, dhar ir qahad; 21. 16: sed semetipsum exinanivit formam servi accipiens = oh ir sih selbun aridalida, dhuo ir scalches chiliihnissa infene.

3. The Prepositional Phrase.

Rannow (p. 102) cites one instance of this construction in Isidor: 19. 26: incarnatus et homo factus est = in fleisches liihheman uuardh uuordan; which should be compared with Bede² 239. 18: Cristus incarnatus = 310. 26: in menniscum lichoman.

4. The Infinitive.

Gering (p. 397) cites one example from the Gothic: Mk. 10. 46: ἐκάθητο παρὰ τὴν δόδον προσαντῶν = sat faur wig du aihtron, but the Greek participle here is better considered predicative.

5. The Adverb.

Four examples of this locution occur in Gothic (Gering, p. 306): 2 Cor. 13. 2, 10: ἀπὸν γράφω = aljaapro melja; Phil. 1. 25, 27.
6. The Adjective.

This substitution is very common in Gothic (Gering, p. 301 f.): Mk. 6. 9: ύποδεδεμένος = gaskohs; etc., etc.—Six examples occur in Isidor (Rannow, p. 102): 33. 5: mente caecati = mnotes blinde; etc.

7. The Substantive.

This construction occurs in Gothic (Gering, p. 303) and in Old High German (Rannow, p. 102). Examples:—(a) Gothic: Mat. 8. 16: προσήνεγκαν αὐτῷ δαίμονις ζωμένους πολλοὺς = atberun du imma daimonarjans managans; etc.;—
(b) Old High German: Isidor, 21. 30: dominus numeravit scribens populos = druhtin saghida dhazs chiscrip dhero folcho (see Rannow's footnote on this sentence).
CHAPTER VI.

THE ANGLO-SAXON APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE AS A NORM OF STYLE.

In my dissertation on The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon a chapter is given to "The Absolute Participle as a Norm of Style," which is based on Professor Gildersleeve's essay "On the Stylistic Effect of the Greek Participle." In that chapter is discussed the stylistic effect not only of the absolute participle, but also, incidentally, of the appositive participle. I need not, therefore, detail here the theory there laid down, the more so that nothing has occurred to make me change the view then expressed. Since, however, this study may come into the hands of some to whom the earlier paper is not accessible, I shall briefly state the theory there given, and add such comments and illustrations as may seem called for by the present detailed investigation of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

The theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was summarized in these words (p. 52): "The stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was much the same as in the classical languages: it gave movement to the sentence; it made possible flexibility and compactness. But, owing to the artificial position of the absolute construction in Anglo-Saxon, its stylistic value was reduced to a minimum, was indeed scarcely felt at all. The absolute participle rejected as an instrument of style, the Anglo-Saxon had no adequate substitute therefor. The two commonest substitutes, the dependent sentence and the coordinate clause, as used in Anglo-Saxon, became unwieldy and monotonous. Brevity and compactness were impossible; the sentence was slow in movement and somewhat cumber-
some. The language stood in sore need of a more flexible instrument for the notation of subordinate conceptions, of such an instrument as the absolute dative seemed capable of becoming but never became."

In the light of the foregoing history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, does this theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle apply likewise to the appositive participle? Was the appositive participle as artificial a construction as the absolute participle? or was it more or less naturalized, if not native, in Anglo-Saxon?

Undoubtedly the stylistic effect of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is to give the sentence movement, flexibility, and compactness; and it does this to a somewhat greater degree, I think, than could an equal number of absolute participles. To test this statement one need only compare a half dozen pages of Alfred, in which, as we have seen, the appositive participle (especially in certain uses) is rare, with the same number of Ælfric's, which are strewn therewith. The slowness and the clumsiness of the former are not more patent than the rapidity, the flexibility, and the grace of the latter. Space does not allow quotations, nor are they necessary.

But the above statement is with reference to the appositive participle as a whole, whereas in Anglo-Saxon, as we have learned, the appositive participle has three sharply differentiated uses. Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

In its adjectival use, the appositive participle contributes not only to rapidity and flexibility but also to picturesqueness. The two former effects were attained in both prose and poetry; the last, as a rule, in poetry only; and all three to a greater or less degree in all stages of the Anglo-Saxon period, at least so far as the preterite participle was concerned. For the adjectival use of the present participle the Anglo-Saxon went to the Latin, though not until the Late West Saxon period. What a boon this borrowing was is clearly revealed by a comparison of Alfred with Ælfric or with the Gospels; or, to give a more modern illustration, by comparing modern English with New High German, as,
for instance, in the examples quoted from von Jagemaun in chapter v.

Of the adverbial uses, the Anglo-Saxon at the outset wielded with skill only that denoting manner, as in *swigende ecce*, etc. How poor he was as compared with us may be readily realized if we suppose the modern Englishman deprived, as is the modern German, of the ability to express means, time, cause, concession, etc., by the appositive participle. That was the situation of the Early West Saxon; but, thanks to Ælfric and the translators of the Gospels, Anglo-Saxon borrowed from the Latin what was so sadly needed; and Ælfric's pages run as smoothly as do those of a modern Englishman. The fact, however, that these newly introduced uses of the adverbial appositive participle are so rare in the latter part of the *Chronicle* and in Wulfstan, leaves it doubtful whether the wisdom of Ælfric's adoption received as immediate recognition as it deserved; though the non-use in the former may be due to the fact that it professes to be merely a bald record of facts. It seems probable, nevertheless, that these uses did not become normal for English until after the close of the Anglo-Saxon period, largely perhaps through the Anglo-Saxon and Middle English translations of the Bible, supplemented by French influence.

The Anglo-Saxon stood in greater need, I think, of the co-ordinate participle than of the adverbial (exclusive of that denoting manner); and Alfred's persistent refusal to use it accounts in a large measure for the monotony of his style. Again Ælfric and the translators of the *Gospels*, discerning the need, borrowed from the Latin, this time the co-ordinate participle, and thereby gave to English a construction that, judged from the standpoint of style, was of immense value. Here, also, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is the difference between modern English and modern German, happily illustrated in the examples cited from von Jagemaun above (chapter v). A third time Ælfric's lead was coldly followed by his immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author(s) of the later *Chronicle*),
and the construction hardly became fixed until the Middle English period, again through the help of the biblical translations. The foregoing applies chiefly to the present participle; the preterite participle, being inherently unsuited to the co-ordinate use, is as rare in Ælfric as in modern English.

The chief shortcoming, however, of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participle was, I take it, that in no one of the three uses did the present participle originally have the power of governing an object in construction. The introduction of this use, from the Latin, by Ælfric and the Late West Saxon translators constitutes, to my mind, their chief contribution to English style; for, with the possible exception of the infinitive and the modern gerund, no single construction has contributed so much to the compactness and the flexibility of the modern English sentence. Here, too, the innovation was tardily accepted, being seldom resorted to by Wulfstan or by the author of the Peterborough Chronicle. The general adoption of the construction in English was largely due to the influence of the biblical translations. Finally, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is once more paralleled in that between modern English and modern German.

The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle call for only brief comment. The most frequent substitute, the co-ordinated finite verb, does well enough for the co-ordinate participle, but for no other, since it ignores shades of meaning. The next most common, the subordinated finite verb, is ill fitted to take the place of the co-ordinate participle, since it unduly subordinates the idea of the participle to that of the principal verb; but it is an excellent substitute for the adjectival and the adverbial participle, and is often so used not only in Anglo-Saxon but also in modern English and in the other Germanic languages. Undoubtedly, however, the appositive participle is a more flexible instrument for the denotation of subordinate ideas than is the dependent finite verb; witness the difference in this regard between modern English and modern German.
CHAPTER VII.

RESULTS.

The following are in brief the results that I believe to be established by this investigation:—

1. In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs oftenest in the nominative case, occasionally in the accusative and the dative, rarely in the genitive.

2. In Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than has hitherto been supposed. For details see p. 150 ff.

3. When inflected, the appositive participle almost invariably follows the strong declension.

4. As a rule, the appositive participle follows its principal, though occasionally (about 100 times in all) it precedes.

5. The uses of the appositive participle are three-fold:—
   (1) Adjectival, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause.
   (2) Adverbial, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause; subdivided into (a) modal (manner and means), (b) temporal, (c) causal, (d) final, (e) concessive, and (f) conditional clauses. Some participles denoting manner, however, are equivalent, not to dependent adverbial clauses, but to simple adverbs.
   (3) Co-ordinate, in which the participle is substantially equivalent to an independent clause; subdivided into (a) the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense, which merely denotes an accompanying circumstance; and (b) the
"iterating" participle, which simply repeats the idea of the chief verb.

6. As to the origin of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, in some uses it is (A) native and in others (B) foreign (Latin).

A. Native.

(1) In the following uses the appositive participle appears to be a native English idiom:

(a) The adjectival use of the preterite participle and, perhaps, of a few slightly verbal present participles like living, lying (liegende), etc.
(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes manner.
(c) Perhaps the temporal use in a few present participles of slight verbal force like being, living, and sleeping.

(2) The grounds for the statements in (1) are as follows:

(a) In the uses there specified the appositive participle is found in Early West Saxon. (b) It occurs, also, in Late West Saxon, in the more original prose (the Chronicle, the Laws, and Wulfstan), and in the poems not known to be based on Latin originals as well as in those believed to be translations. (c) In a number of instances in the translations, the Old English participle does not correspond to an appositive participle in the Latin original, but to various other constructions (see Tables at end of Chapter III). (d) In these uses the appositive participle is common in the other Teutonic languages.

B. Foreign (Latin).

(3) In the uses named below, on the contrary, the appositive participle is not a native English construction, but is borrowed from the Latin:

(a) The adjectival use of the present participle except in a few that have but little verbal force like living and lying.
(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes means.

(c) The temporal use of the participle except in a few slightly verbal present participles like *being*, *living*, and *sleeping*.

(d) The causal use of the present and of the preterite participle, though the latter may in part be an extension of the adjectival preterite participle.

(e) The final use of the participle, though this may in a slight degree be due to the frequent predicative use of the present participle after verbs of motion in Anglo-Saxon.

(f) The concessive use of the participle.

(g) The conditional use of the participle.

(h) The co-ordinate use of the participle.

(i) The present participle (whether adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate) when it governs an object in construction.

(4) The statements of (3) are believed to be substantiated by the following considerations: (a) The specified uses of the appositive participle are practically unknown in Early West Saxon; and, in the few instances in which they do occur, they are usually in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (b) In hundreds of instances Alfred expressly avoided the constructions, although they occurred on every page of his Latin originals. (c) These uses are very rare in the more original prose (the *Chronicle*, the *Laws*, and Wulfstan), and in almost every instance have been traced to a direct or indirect Latin prototype. (d) They are very rare, too, in Anglo-Saxon poetry, and are found almost exclusively in the poems known to rest on Latin originals. (e) They seldom occur in the other Germanic languages except in the more slavish translations. (f) They are very common, on the other hand, in the later and closer Anglo-Saxon translations (*Ælfric*, the *Gospels*, and *Benet*1).—The cogency of these arguments varies somewhat with respect to the several uses; concerning which see the detailed treatment in Chapter III.

(5) From the above statements ((1)–(4)) as to the different origin of the several uses of the appositive participle we draw
this general conclusion: Anglo-Saxon was favorable to the appositive participle with pronounced adjectival (descriptive) force, but was unfavorable to the appositive participle with strong verbal (assertive) force.

7. Originally in Anglo-Saxon, the present appositive participle did not have the power of governing a direct object in construction. All present participles with a direct object are due to Latin influence.

8. Nor did the preterite appositive participle have the power of governing an accusative of the direct object. Only one example occurs in the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, and that is in imitation of the Latin original.

9. The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle were:

   (1) Most frequently a co-ordinated finite verb.
   (2) Somewhat less frequently a subordinated finite verb.
   (3) Not infrequently a prepositional phrase.
   (4) Occasionally a verb in the infinitive mood, both inflected and uninflected.
   (5) Rarely an attributive participle.
   (6) In a few instances an absolute participle.
   (7) Occasionally an adverb.
   (8) Rarely an adjective.
   (9) Very rarely a substantive.

10. Although my treatment of the appositive participle in the other Germanic languages is professedly not exhaustive, it seems to make probable the following conclusions:

   (1) The uses of the appositive participle in the other Teutonic languages are on the whole substantially the same as in Anglo-Saxon, but with considerable variation in the different languages and authors. Ulfilas and Tatian, for instance, are much more addicted to the appositive participle, especially that with verbal force, than are any of the Anglo-Saxon writers except the author of Benet¹, which is a gloss.
(2) In the other Teutonic languages as in Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle is of two-fold origin. The adverbial participle denoting manner, the adjectival (relative) past participle, the adjectival present and the temporal participle in such verbs as be, live, and sleep, are perhaps native. In all other uses the appositive participle, whether present or past, is probably of Greek (Ulfilas) or Latin origin, though in one or two of these functions, as in Anglo-Saxon, the appositive participle may in part be an extension of the attributive or the predicative use of the participle. The present appositive participle with an object in construction seems to be of wholly foreign origin.

(3) The substitutes for the appositive participle are about the same in the other Germanic Languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

11. As for its stylistic effect, in Anglo-Saxon as in the classical languages the appositive participle conduces to rapidity, compactness, and flexibility. In the adjectival use of the preterite participle and in the adverbial use of the present and of the preterite denoting manner, this is more or less exemplified in all periods of Anglo-Saxon; and in the poetry the participle contributes, also, to picturesqueness. The other uses of the appositive participle were practically ignored by the Early West Saxons, and to this fact are largely due the unwieldiness and the monotony of Alfred's style. Ælfric and the translators of the Gospels, on the other hand, adopted these uses from the Latin, and handled the same almost as skillfully as do modern Englishmen; whence results in great measure the excellence of Ælfric's style in point of flexibility and grace. But these innovations were looked upon coldly by Ælfric's immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author of the Peterborough Chronicle), and scarcely became thoroughly naturalized during the Anglo-Saxon period.

Morgan Callaway, Jr.
ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

Originally not intending to discuss the inflection of the appositive participle, I did not in my first draft jot down all the peculiar forms observed. After deciding to treat the subject, I thought that the Introduction could be held in type until the final proving and printing of the Statistics. But, as their bulk made this impossible, the following additions and corrections are called for in the section of the Introduction (iv) dealing with the inflection of the appositive participle:

**The Present Participle.**

NS. (p. 150):—L. 7 from below: change three to two, and strike out *Ælftr. L. S. 282. 5*; for, after the preparation of the Statistics, I received vol. iv of Skeat’s edition of this work, in the “Errata” of which he corrects *feohtend* to *feohtende*. This, of course, changes *feohtend* in my Statistics (p. 197, l. 27).

L. 3 from below: change four to five, and add 104. 16 after 95. 11.

L. 1 from below: to exceptions add *-ande*: *Benet*¹ 68. 1; *-ynde*: *Mat*¹ 9. 29.

ASM. (p. 151, l. 6):—*Ælftr. L. S. 78. 489* has *-ande*, which reduces the number of *-ende* by one.

N. and A. PMFN. (p. 151, l. 10): to the exceptions add: (1) masculine: *-ande*: *Benet*¹ 55. 4, *Greg*¹ 123. 16; *-onde*: *Bede*¹ 72. 9, *Bened. 9. 7*; *-ynde*: *Mat*¹ 9. 27, 31; (2) neuter: *-ande*: *Ælftr. L. S. 224. 86.*²

**The Preterite Participle.**

NSM. (p. 151, l. 16):—*Benet*¹ 100. 3 has *bepæht* for *bepæhte*; and *Chron. 1048 E* has *unswicæn*. 
The following typographical errors should be noted:—
P. 146, l. 26: change dash to hyphen.
P. 147, l. 2: for rechfertigen read rechtfertigen.
P. 149, l. 16: for Indo-Germanic read Indo-Germanic.
P. 180, l. 23: for unbefohtene read unbefohitene.
P. 181, l. 11: for Singe read Singe.
P. 185, l. 26: for geondedal = angaritia: 7. 54 read geneadod = 54. 7: angariati.
P. 288, l. 12: for eveendende read eveendende.

M. C., Jr.

A NOTE OF THANKS.

I wish heartily to thank my colleagues in the School of English, Drs. Killis Campbell and Pierce Butler, and my honored teacher, Professor James W. Bright, for gracious help in the issuing of this monograph. Each of the three has kindly assisted in reading the proof, and has offered valuable suggestions for the betterment of my study.

M. C., Jr.
BIBLIOGRAPHY.

I. Texts Read.

a. Anglo-Saxon.


Ælf. Hept. = ib.


Ælf. L. S. = Skeat, Ælfric’s Lives of Saints, E. E. T. S., nos. 76, 82, 94, London, 1881, 1885, 1890. Vol. ix (1900) was received too late to be read for this study. Vols. i and ii are cited simply by page and line; vol. iii, by number of homily and of line.


Boeth. = Sedgefield, King Alfred’s Old English Version of Boethius De Consolatione Philosophiae, Oxford, 1899. [For the prose only; the Metres are taken from Grein-Wülker’s Bibl. der augs. Poesie.]

Christ = Albert S. Cook, The Christ of Cynegils, Boston, 1900.


Poems = Grein-Wülker’s Bibliothek der alts. Poesie, 3 vols., Kassel, 1881-1898. [For all the poems except Cynewulf’s Christ, which see above.]

Ps. Th.¹ = Thorpe, Libri Psalmorum Versio antiqua Latina cum Paraphrase Anglo-Saxonica, Oxonii, 1835. [For the prose psalms only; the poetical ones are cited from Grein-Wülker.]


b. Latin.


Benet.² = Latin in Benet.¹

Boeth.² = Peiper, Boetii Philosophiae Consolationis Libri Quinque, Leipzig, 1871.


Hept.² = Latin Heptateuch, etc., given in .Elf. Hept., which see.

Oros.² = Latin in Oros.¹

Ps. Th.² = Latin in Ps. Th.¹ [The Introductions are taken from Bruce in it.]

II. Works Cited.

Bartlett, Helen: The Metrical Division of the Paris Psalter, Baltimore, 1890.


Behaghel, O.: Die Syntax des Heliand, Wien, 1897.


THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.


Conradi, B.: Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulf's Juliana, Halle, 1886.


Einenkel, E.: Streifzüge durch die Mittelengl. Syntax, Münster, 1887.


Erdmann, O.: Untersuchungen über die Syntax der Sprache Otfrids, Halle, 1874.

Erdmann, O.: Grundzüge der Deutschen Syntax, 1, Stuttgart, 1886; ii, by Erdmann and Mensing, 1898.


Flamme, J.: Syntax der Blickling Homilies, Bonn, 1885.


Gollancz, I.: Cynewulf's Christ, London, 1892.


Helm, F.: *Quaestiones Syntaxae de Participiorum Usu Tacitino Velleiano Sallustiano*, 1879.
Hicks: *Institutiones Grammaticae*, Oxoniae, 1689;—*Thesaurus Grammaticalis*, Oxoniae, 1705.
Kent, C. W.: *Elene*, Boston, 1889.
Kinard, J. P.: *A Study of Wulfstan's Homilies: Their Style and Sources*, Baltimore, 1897.
Lücke, O.: *Absolute Participia im Gotischen u. ihr Verhältn. zum Gr. Original*, Magdeburg, 1876.


Schrader, B.: Studien zur Ælfrischen Syntax, Jena, 1887.

Schürmann, J.: Darstellung der Syntax in Æthelwold's Ælone, Paderborn, 1884.


Torp: see Falk.
Wunderlich, H.: *Beiträge zur Syntax des Notker'schen Boethius*, Berlin, 1883 (?).

M. C., Jr.